

A HISTORY OF RUSK COUNTY, TEXAS

By

DORMAN H. WINFREY



Thomas I. Rusk



M. L.

Gc
976.401
R89W
1152499

GENEALOGY COLLECTION


✓

ALLEN COUNTY PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 1833 02290 4723

Gc
976
R89
1152



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2024

A History of Rusk County, Texas

A HISTORY OF RUSK COUNTY, TEXAS

By

DORMAN H. WINFREY

Introduction By
H. BAILEY CARROLL

THE PUBLIC LIBRARY
OF
FORT WAYNE AND ALLEN COUNTY, IND.



Waco, Texas
1961

Copyright, 1961
Dorman H. Winfrey

2081 MAYNARD AND VICTOR COMPANY, INC.
OF
THE PUBLIC LIBRARY

1152499

TO
RUTH CAROLYN AND LAURA

INTRODUCTION

Recently at a meeting of the Southwestern Social Science Association at Dallas, Dr. Boyd Shafer, editor of the **American Historical Review**, paid an eloquent tribute to the value of local and state historical studies.

Local history is not only living history—it is basic history. Generalizations at the census level in the broad field of American history are frequently difficult to make and sometimes meaningless. The same limitations are not met in local history where the subject is much more intimate and more readily comprehended.

Dorman Winfrey actually began accumulating background on the history of Rusk County, Texas, in his boyhood for he lived in the county, tramped its woods and streams, attended its schools, and met cultured and refined neighbors who had roots sunk deep in the Rusk County heritage and way of life.

Young Dorman's footsteps were turned by various members of the Watkins family the way they should have been and he early entered the Junior Historian work and the Texas State Historical Association. He won state awards for the excellence of his writings.

After Army service, he put in about a decade in editorial services in the office of the Association where he worked on the **Junior Historian**, the **Southwestern Historical Quarterly**, the **Handbook of Texas**, and other books. During this time he also graduated from the University of Texas and entered its graduate school. When the time came to choose formally a subject for a Master's thesis, he made the choice that had actually been made years before. He chose to write a history of Rusk County, an account of his own native soil and the people who had molded the region and had, in turn, been shaped by it.

Winfrey's background and his graduate training combined to dictate that he should undertake the balanced scholarly history of the county. The thesis therefore had to be laid on the documents. When completed about ten years ago, it was a distinctive objective study—not a passing thing of the moment.

The years that have intervened between the first writing and this publication have given opportunity for test-

ing, mellowing, and seasoning. The amount of additional source material which has appeared has been negligible—splendid testimony to the thoroughness of the original research.

With this publication an old printing establishment in Texas becomes a new pioneer enterpriser in the field of publication. Perhaps the Davis Press may be as able to meet the challenges and adjust to new conditions as have the Rusk County forbears. In selecting the work of the present Archivist of Texas the Press has chosen well for an initial publication. The start is auspicious.

H. Bailey Carroll

Austin
April 19, 1960

PREFACE

This history, which grew out of a master's thesis completed at the University of Texas in 1951 under the direction of Professor H. Bailey Carroll, is a record of events which transpired in Rusk County, Texas, from earliest times through the 1950's. The history begins with a discussion of the geographical and geological settings in Rusk County, factors which are important in the formation of the culture complex. Chronological development of the country begins with the period of Spanish exploration and early settlement. This is then followed with county organization, the Civil War and Reconstruction, development from 1880 until 1930, the oil boom, and a chapter on towns and communities brings the history to the present. The history concludes with a chapter of biographical sketches of a few of the outstanding persons in the county.

The author owes his interest in the local history of Rusk County to the training he received as a student in Miss Myrtis Watkins' Texas history class in Henderson High School and as a member of the Junior Historian Chapter in the school. In her Texas history class Miss Watkins included a unit on Rusk County history, and it was this germ, so to speak, which produced this history. The author wishes to express his sincere thanks to Miss Watkins for the valuable assistance she gave in permitting the use of her materials on Rusk County, for checking numerous dates and gathering needed materials, and for reading the history from time to time as it was being written. A note of thanks is extended to Mrs. Jimmie Harris for her prompt replies to the many inquiries on all sorts of subjects which were sent to her.

Over the years a great number of persons have aided the author in gathering material for this history, and deep appreciation is expressed to each individual. Among the persons who have rendered special help and assistance are: Dr. and Mrs. J. E. Watkins, Miss Harriet Smither, Mrs. Bertha Brandt, Miss Llerena Friend, Mrs. Marcelle Hamer, Miss Ethel Barrett, Mr. John S. Crow, Mr. Gil Jones, Mrs. Nita Byrd, Mr. Randolph Harris, Mrs. Dollie Hamilton Forester, Mr. Luke A. Winfrey, Miss Bess Richardson,

Miss Virginia Richardson, Mr. and Mrs. Emmett Lowry,
Mr. Fred Pentecost, Jr., Mr. Tom Jones, and my wife, Ruth
Carolyn, who typed the manuscript and prepared the index.

Dorman H. Winfrey

Austin

May 26, 1960

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Introduction	VII
Preface	IX
Chapter I. The Physical Setting.....	1
Chapter II. Spanish Exploration and Early Settlement	10
Chapter III. County Organization and Development in 1860	18
Chapter IV. Civil War and Reconstruction.....	38
Chapter V. The County, 1880 to 1930.....	72
Chapter VI. Oil in Rusk County.....	89
Chapter VII. Communities and Towns.....	105
Chapter VIII. Biographies	117
Appendix I. Post Offices and Postmaster in Rusk County.....	147
Appendix II. Muster Rolls for Rusk County.....	150
Appendix III. Explanation of Map Areas.....	164
Bibliography	166
Index	173

Illustrations and Maps

	Opposite Page
Geographical Map of Rusk County.....	2
Archaeological Evidences in Rusk County.....	9
Spanish Exploration	10
Tatum House	26
Monte Verdi During 1850's.....	28
Monte Verdi Before and After Restoration	28
Henderson Times, Dec. 17, 1864.....	46
Henderson and Overton Train.....	58
Henderson Public Square After 1878.....	60
Henderson About 1900.....	78
Henderson, 1917	82
Henderson About 1925	84
Rusk County Courthouse, 1878-1929	86
Millville Oil Company Stock.....	90
Joiner Discovery Well	94
Joiner Well Crew.....	92
East Texas Oil Field Map.....	102
Rusk County Highway Map.....	106
Rusk County Probate Areas.....	164

CHAPTER I

THE PHYSICAL SETTING

Rusk County is located in the northeastern part of the state of Texas and contains approximately 944 square miles.¹ The county lies between north latitude $31^{\circ}51'$. . . $32^{\circ}25'$ and west longitude $94^{\circ}25'$. . . $94^{\circ}58'$.² It is bounded on the east by Shelby and Panola counties, on the north by Gregg and Harrison counties, on the west by Cherokee and Smith counties, and on the south by Nacogdoches County.

The county is situated on the divide between the Sabine River on the east and the Angelina River on the west. The Sabine drainage system includes the following small streams which are listed as they empty into the Sabine River and its tributaries from the west to east to south:

1. Rabbit Creek rises in northwestern Rusk County and flows northeast about twenty miles to join the Sabine River in south central Gregg County.

2. Big Head Creek rises in northwestern Rusk County and flows northeast about ten miles to join Rabbit Creek in Gregg County.

3. Towiska Creek rises in northern Rusk County and flows eleven miles into Cherokee Bayou.

4. Cherokee Bayou heads in central Rusk County north of the town of Henderson and flows to the northeast about twenty-four miles to empty into the Sabine. During a part of its course the stream forms the boundary between Rusk and Gregg counties.

5. Martins Creek, heading in eastern Rusk County about two miles east of the town of Henderson, flows twenty-eight miles to join the Sabine River in Panola County. The stream was named for Daniel Martin, who with his family settled on the banks of the creek in 1833.

6. Dry Creek rises in northeastern Rusk County and flows northeast eight miles to flow into Martins Creek.

¹ The Texas Almanac, 1949, p. 582, gives the figure of 944; the General Land Office of Texas has a chart showing acreage of Texas counties which indicates the figure for the county is 908 square miles.

² E. T. Dumble, Second Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Texas, 1890, p. 255.

7. Murvaul Creek heads in southeastern Rusk County and flows about twenty-five miles across Panola County into the Sabine.

The middle and southwestern portions of the county are drained by the tributaries of the Angelina River which are listed in order from west to east.

1. Striker Creek rises in northeastern Cherokee County and flows southeast twenty-one miles to join the Angelina River in southwestern Rusk County.

2. Johnson Creek rises in northwestern Rusk County and flows southwest for nineteen miles to its junction with Striker Creek in southeastern Cherokee County. The stream was named for John, son of the Cherokee Indian Chief Bowles.

3. Brumley Creek rises northeast of the town of Henderson and flows south about ten miles to join Shawnee Creek. It was named for the Brumley family who settled early in the vicinity.

4. Scober Creek rises in southwestern Rusk County and flows about four miles into Shawnee Creek.

5. Shawnee Creek, named for the Shawnee Indians of the vicinity, rises in central Rusk County just north of Henderson and flows southwesterly twenty-eight miles into the Angelina.

6. Barnhardt Creek, also known as Anadarko Creek, rises about four miles southeast of the town of Henderson and flows to the southwest approximately eleven miles to empty into Shawnee Creek about two miles northwest of Laneville in the southern part of the county.

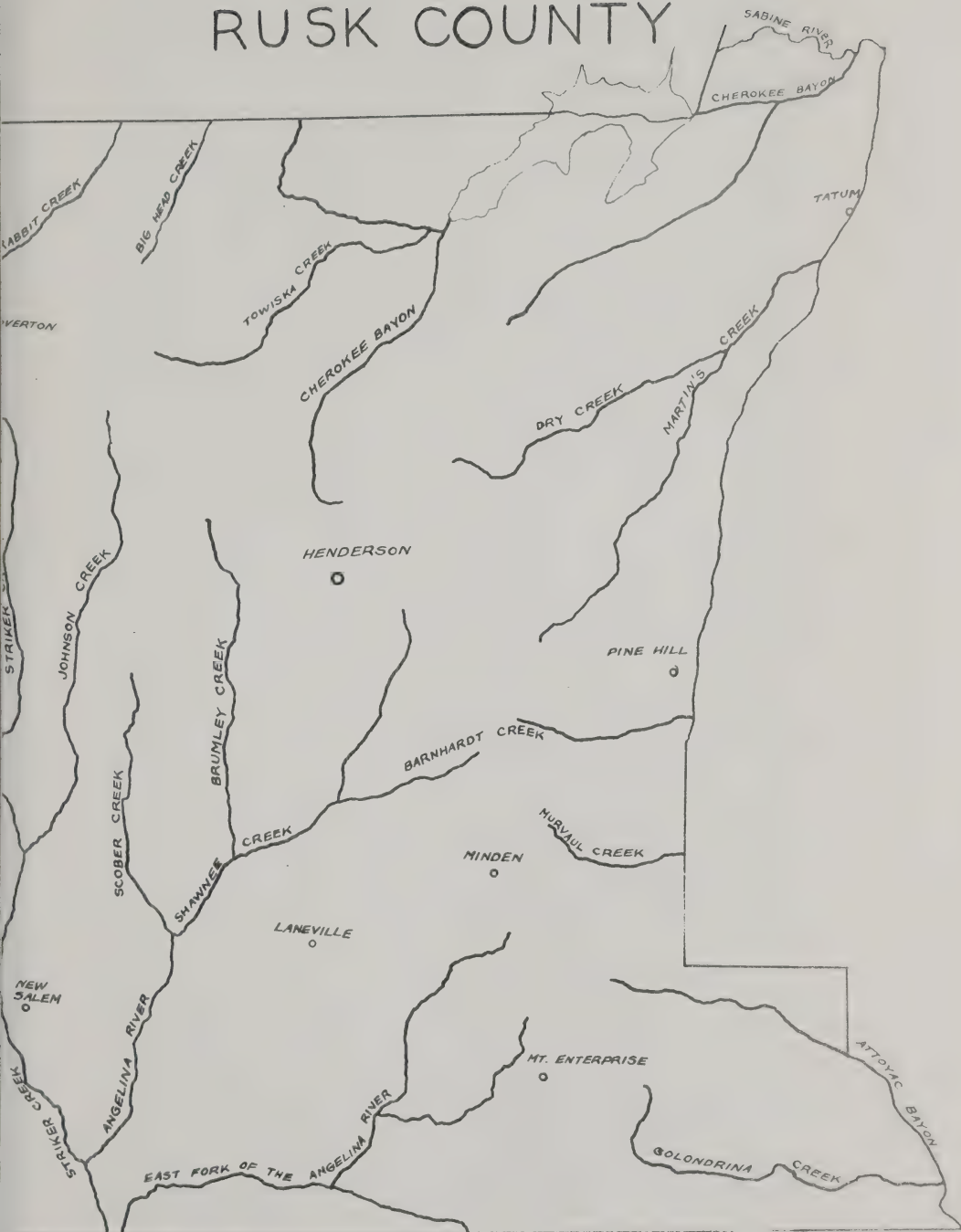
7. Angelina River, named for the Indian girl named Angelina, is formed by the junction of Barnhardt, Scober, and Shawnee creeks in southwest central Rusk County. The river flows to the southeast forming the boundaries between several counties.

8. East Fork of the Angelina heads in small branches in southeastern Rusk County and flows generally west into the Angelina River at about the county line between Rusk and Nacogdoches counties.

9. Golondrina Creek, named for the Spanish word **golondrina** meaning swallow, rises in extreme southeastern Rusk County and flows east eleven miles to a confluence with Attoyac Bayou.

10. Attoyac Bayou heads in southeastern Rusk County about five miles east of the town of Mount Enterprise. On its southeasterly course of approximately sixty miles, the

RUSK COUNTY



stream at various points forms the boundary between Rusk and Shelby and other counties, and joins the Angelina River at the southeastern corner of Nacogdoches County.

Most of the streams are fed by springs and run at all seasons. With the exception of the Sabine River, which flows along the northeast corner for five or six miles, there are no large streams.³ Lake Cherokee, completed in 1950 and located on Cherokee Bayou in the northeastern part of the county, has an area of 4,000 acres with a sixty-five mile shoreline.⁴

Generally, the country is marked by gently sloping hills, narrow valleys, and dales. The altitude varies between 300 and 750 feet, and the highest elevations are the iron-capped ridges in the northern, northeastern, and southern portions of the county.⁵ With the exceptions of the valleys which form the margins of the streams, the remainder of the country is hilly and rolling. Situated in the Pine-Oak Forest vegetation region of the East Texas Timber Country, Rusk County is covered with more than twenty varieties of timber.⁶ On the uplands the timbers consist chiefly of red and white pine, post oak, blackjack, and hickory. White oak, red oak, ash, walnut, mulberry, ironwood, gum, elm, beech, and dogwood are found in the bottoms.⁷ Considerable cypress trees are along Cherokee Bayou and Towiska Creek, and early settlers used the cypress trees to make shingles.

In the narrow valleys the soil which borders the streams is generally a mellow alluvium, and that of the uplands is divided between gray, red, and chocolate sandy land, with the gray predominating. The soils all belong to the established series — The Orangeburg, Norfolk, Susquehanna, Lufkin, and Nacogdoches.⁸ Some of the red soils in the Norfolk and Nacogdoches series make up the "East Texas Redlands."⁹ The top of the ridges is sandy, and the hill-side soils are loamy with a considerable mixture of sand.

³ C. W. Ely and A. E. Kocher, *Soil Survey of the Henderson Area, Texas*, 1.

⁴ *Texas Almanac*, 1949, p. 582.

⁵ Dumble, *Second Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Texas*, 1890, p. 252.

⁶ Benjamin Carroll Tharp, *Vegetation of Texas*, 37.

⁷ A. W. Spaight, *The Resources, Soil, and Climate of Texas*, 269.

⁸ R. T. Milner, *East Texas: Its Topography, Soils, Timber, Agricultural Products, People, Rainfall, Streams, Climate, Etc.* (Texas Department of Agriculture Bulletin, No. 38, 1914), p. 20.

⁹ W. T. Carter, "The Soils of Texas," *Texas Agricultural Experiment Station Bulletin No. 431*, 1931, p. 35; see also maps at the end of the publication.

As a result of the weathering and gradual erosion by rains on the hillsides, the valley soils are a mixture of the finer particles and make fertile sandy loams.

The annual rainfall of the county is 43.51 inches¹⁰ and is usually so distributed as to insure fair uniformity of staple crops in average growing seasons. An abundance of moisture is usually present in the county.¹¹ The rainfall is heaviest in January and lightest in August. While the winters are never extremely cold, they are often rendered disagreeable by sudden cold spells, or "northers."¹² The average date for the last killing frost in the spring is March 16, and the first in the fall is November 13, giving a growing season of approximately 240 days.¹³ Mean annual temperature is 65.9°.¹⁴

An adequate rainfall provides the county with great quantities of grasses which are able to support stock at most seasons of the year. The principal grasses are the Bermuda, Rescue, and Johnson together with Bur Clover.¹⁵ In 1914, R. T. Milner, commissioner of agriculture at one time, wrote the following concerning Bur Clover:

Bur Clover is just beginning to introduce itself in different portions of the country. Since East Texas has begun to incorporate its county seats and prevent cows, horses, hogs, sheep and goats from running on the streets, it has made wonderful progress. For about fifty years it has grown in Henderson, but not until this year (1914) have the citizens taken notice of it. Henderson has prohibited livestock from foraging on its principal streets for two or three years, and in that short time Bur Clover has literally covered many alleys, spread over some of the streets, taken possession of vacant lots, and

¹⁰ United States Weather Bureau, Dallas, Texas, to D. W., August 2, 1950, University of Texas Archives.

¹¹ Elmer H. Johnson, "The Natural Regions of Texas," *University of Texas Bulletin*, No. 3113, 1931, p. 26; see also maps at the end of this publication.

¹² "Norther" is a term used in Texas to describe a cold wind descending over the Great Plains from the north and blowing into a warm area. The norther may be either "wet" or "dry." Lasting from one to three days, the norther is the occasion for much suffering among the livestock and much discomfort for human beings. W. P. Webb, *The Great Plains*, 24-25. An excellent article on northers is Edward Hake Phillips, "The Texas Norther," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, LIX, 1-13.

¹³ Ely and Kocher, *Soil Survey of the Henderson Area*, Texas, 9.

¹⁴ United States Weather Bureau, Dallas, Texas, to D. W., August 2, 1950, University of Texas Archives; *Texas Almanac*, 1949, p. 582.

¹⁵ Milner, *East Texas*, 19.

is rapidly covering an old Bermuda pasture near the city¹⁶

Varieties of wild flowers found in the county include violet, blue daisy, cowslip, yellow jessamine, wild honeysuckle, standing cypress, wild onion, tigridia, and black-eyed susan.¹⁷

Rusk County has been fortunate in having an abundance of mineral resources. Oil, discovered in 1930, has added great wealth to the county, and in 1948 Rusk was the second ranking oil-producing county in the state with 42,588,512 barrels.¹⁸ Surveys have shown that the county has an abundance of clay, some lignite, mineral water, greensand, marl, and iron ores. At one time mineral springs were of primary importance, leading Homer S. Thrall, early Methodist minister and writer, to observe in 1885:

There are some mineral springs, one near Mount Enterprise, which is considered very valuable, and is much resorted to by invalids for its healing qualities; there is another southeast of Mount Enterprise some four or five miles distant, which is considered good in cases of dropsy and other diseases.¹⁹

Other early mineral springs were Welch's Springs near Brachfield, "Sulphur Springs" near Henderson, and "Graveyard Spring" near Chapman. Wells are easily drilled and most of the water obtained is pure freestone.

Crop-growing in the county is of diversified character and has changed little since 1880. Cotton is still the principal crop grown, and production in 1948 totaled 7,869 bales.²⁰ Corn, watermelons, tomatoes, peas, peanuts, sweet and Irish potatoes, and sweet sorghum for syrup are produced on a commercial scale. Tobacco and rice were grown in the 1880's, and at one time as much as sixty bushels of rice to an acre were raised without irrigation.²¹ Hereford, Shorthorn, Angus, Brahma, and cross-breeds of beef-cattle are raised.

There is excellent game range in the county, especially in the less densely populated southern and eastern parts. Squirrel, doves, and miscellaneous small game are found; fox hunting is still a favorite pastime. Numerous running

¹⁶ *Ibid.*, 23-24.

¹⁷ Mrs. Jimmie Harris to D. W., July 10, 1950, University of Texas Archives.

¹⁸ *Texas Almanac*, 1949, p. 582.

¹⁹ Homer S. Thrall, *A Pictorial History of Texas*, 692.

²⁰ *Texas Almanac*, 1949, p. 582.

²¹ Spaight, *The Resources, Soil, and Climate of Texas*, 269.

streams and several lakes, including four thousand-acre Lake Cherokee, afford excellent fishing.

Compared to the neighboring counties of Cherokee, Nacogdoches, and Panola, Rusk County has yielded little material with which the archaeologist can work. This lack of archaeological material has made it difficult to determine information on early Indians and occupations.²² In such instances where material is lacking for particular areas but adjacent areas yield much, the archaeologist finds it necessary to draw conclusions from what has been found in nearby localities.

On the basis of what has been uncovered it is thought that Rusk County, as well as the whole of the eastern United States including all of East Texas, could have been occupied as far back as 2,000 to 1,000 B. C. during the "Archaic Pattern."²³ The people of this period had no agriculture, almost no pottery, and no bow and arrow. They gathered wild foods, fish, and mussels; they used spears and spear-throwers.²⁴

During the Prehistoric Caddo, 1200(?) -1600 A. D., more information is available, and archaeologists have placed three cultures as belonging to this period: the Titus Focus, centered in the Sulphur River valley; the Bossier Focus, centered along the Texas-Louisiana border; and the Frankston Focus, centered in the Neches River valley and the Angelina River valley. It is believed that the Bossier Focus was in Rusk County, with pottery made in crude local styles, plus pottery by trade from Titus and Frankston Foci.²⁵ The occupants during this Prehistoric Caddo period had agriculture, made pottery, and used the bow and arrow.

After 1600, the beginning of the Historic Caddo Period, written records yield some information about the occupants of Rusk County. Between 1761 and 1810 two Tejas Indian villages are known to have existed in the present county

²² Dr. Alex D. Krieger, Archaeologist, University of Texas, interview, July 7, 1950, University of Texas Archives.

²³ "Archaic Pattern" is a term used to indicate a period of time. All archaeologists use terms of one kind or another to indicate that masses of material are to be divided into units, periods, or stages which contain traits characteristic of a particular group of people during a restricted period. Alex D. Krieger, "Culture Complexes and Chronology in Northern Texas," *University of Texas Bulletin*, No. 4640, 1946, p. 11.

²⁴ Dr. Alex D. Krieger, Archaeologist, University of Texas, interview, July 7, 1950, University of Texas Archives.

²⁵ *Ibid.*

area; the village of Aynais in the southwestern corner of the county, and Nacogdoches Village near the present-day town of Minden.²⁶ Near the southwestern part of the town of Henderson is located the site of Shawnee Town, a village which was occupied by the Shawnee Indians before they were driven from East Texas along with the Cherokee Indians in 1839.²⁷

An interesting chapter in Mexican-Indian relations took place in 1826 in a section of East Texas which later became known as Rusk County.²⁸ The Cherokee Indians had long been dissatisfied living under Mexican jurisdiction, and the white settlers had become angered by a controversy between Mexican authorities and the **empresario** Hayden Edwards. The argument resulted in what is known as the Fredonian Rebellion, begun on December 16, 1826, when Benjamin Edwards and some thirty followers rode into Nacogdoches and proclaimed the Republic of Fredonia.

Cherokee leaders Richard Fields and John Dunn Hunter, despairing of the possibility of the Mexican government allowing a separate Cherokee territory, began negotiations with the Fredonian leaders Benjamin Edwards and Martin Parmer on December 21 at Sand Springs in southern Rusk County. In return for Indian help in the rebellion, a portion of the proposed Fredonian Republic was to be given to the Indians. The decision was reached that a line would be drawn from Sand Springs west to the Rio Grande. South of the line would be occupied by the whites, and the Indians would take the territory to the north.

While Fields and Hunter were working with the Fredonians, Bowles, a prominent member of the Cherokee tribe at the time, was in contact with the loyal element of settlers in Texas, and was urging the Cherokees not to cooperate in the projected rebellion. He felt that a loyalty to Mexico would eventually result in a long-awaited land grant. Bowles won out, and Fields and Hunter were never able to muster more than thirty warriors.

With the collapse of the Fredonian Rebellion in Nacogdoches, Fields and Hunter were tried by the Cherokees and executed on May 8, 1827. Bowles succeeded Fields as

²⁶ Carlos E. Castaneda, *Our Catholic Heritage*, V, 404; see also map at the end of the book.

²⁷ *Monuments Erected by the State of Texas to Commemorate the Centenary of Texas Independence*, 125.

²⁸ A full account of this episode can be found in Dorman H. Winfrey, "Chief Bowles of the Texas Cherokees," *Chronicles of Oklahoma*, XXXII, 29-41.

war chief, and Big Mush succeeded Hunter as civil chief.

The map on the following page shows sites in Rusk County where pottery and other evidences have been found to indicate occupancy by Indians.

ARCHAEOLOGICAL EVIDENCES IN RUSK COUNTY

KEY TO THE MAP

- RU 1 about 1½ mis. E. of Turnertown on west bank of branch and ½ mi. N. of Tyler-Henderson hwy. 8-29-39
- RU 2 S. bank of Martins Creek and W. side of rd from Henderson-Carthage hwy. to Church Hill. 8-22-39
- RU 3 About 1 mi. S. of Laneville on N. bank of branch and W. side of rd. 12-27-39
- RU 4 N. bank of Towiska Cr. and both sides of Henderson-Kilgore hwy.
- RU 5 About 2½ mis. SE. of Dirgin on E. bank of Dry Cr. and W. side of rd. which forms Rusk-Panola Co. line. Marwil farm. 1-1-40
- RU 6 About 100 yds. N. of RU 5. 1-1-40
- RU 7 About 4 mis. E. of Church Hill on N. bank of Martins Cr. and in S.E. corner of rd. junction. 1-1-40
- RU 8 About 200 yds. W. of RU 7. 1-1-40
- RU 9 W. bank of Striker Cr. and N. side of Tyler-Henderson hwy. 12-29-39
- RU 10 W. bank of Striker Cr. and S. side of rd. about 3 mis. W. of Carlisle. 12-29-39
- RU 11 S. side of Rusk-Mt. Enterprise hwy. on W. bank of West Fork of Angelina R.
- RU 12 S. bank of Cherokee Bayou about 1½ mis. below bridge on Longview-Tatum rd. 8-23-40
- RU 13 Along S. bank of Cherokee Bayou between Longview-Tatum hwy. and RU 12.
- RU 14 N.E. bank of Towiska Cr. about ¾ mi. E. of Kilgore-Henderson hwy.
- RU 15 in S.E. Henderson on E. bank of branch and about ½ mi. S. of Henderson-Carthage hwy.
- RU 16 About 4 mis. E. of Henderson on E. bank of branch and S. side of Henderson-Carthage hwy.
- RU 17 About 2 mis. S. of Henderson on N. bank of Shawnee Cr. and W. side of Henderson-Laneville rd.
- RU 18 About 1 mi. S. of Henderson on N. bank of Shawnee Cr. Site called "Shawneetown."
- RU 19 S. bank of Shawnee Cr. on both sides of Henderson-Mt. Enterprise hwy.
- RU 20 In W. Henderson on E. bank of branch and N. side of Henderson-Tyler hwy.
- RU 21 N. bank of branch just E. of junction of hwys. from Henderson to Overton and Kilgore.
- RU 22 E. bank of Johnson Cr. and S. of Carlisle-Henderson hwy.
- RU 23 N. bank of branch on W. side of Henderson-Kilgore hwy. just S. of Pitner's Junction.
- RU 24 Across hwy. from RU 23.
- RU 25 About 1½ mis. E. of Henderson-Kilgore hwy. on W. bank of branch and S. side of rd. which turns E. off hwy. about 2 mis. N. of Pitner's Junction.
- RU 26 About 4 mis. S. of Kilgore on S. bank of branch and E. side of Kilgore-Henderson hwy.
- RU 27 About 4½ mis. S. of Kilgore on N. bank of branch and W. side of Kilgore-Henderson hwy.

CHAPTER II

SPANISH EXPLORATION AND EARLY SETTLEMENT

As many as four Spanish expeditions crossed portions of present-day Rusk County between 1691 and 1788. In 1691 Domingo Teran de los Rios, after his appointment as governor of the province of Tejas, conducted into East Texas an expedition which consisted of fifty soldiers, ten missionaries, and three lay brothers.¹ The purpose of the expedition was to establish eight (seven) missions among the Tejas Indians and the neighboring tribes, the exploration of the country and its rivers, and the investigation of the rumors of foreign settlements.

Sometime between November 6, 1691, after crossing the Neches River, and November 28, when he reached the Red River, Teran passed across present Rusk County.² It is probable that this crossing was made in the southwestern corner where the Angelina River forms the boundary between Rusk and Nacogdoches counties. Crossing the Angelina, Teran cut diagonally across the county reaching the northeastern corner, where the Sabine River forms the boundary between Rusk and Harrison counties. After going as far as the settlement of the Cadodachos Indians on the present Red River, the expedition returned in December and crossed the route previously taken through Rusk County.

Captain Domingo (Jose Domingo) Ramon was appointed leader of an expedition into Texas on September 30, 1715, which was brought about by Spanish fears of French encroachment.³ The expedition included nine priests, three lay workers accompanying the priests, twenty-five mounted soldiers, settlers, and servants. Reaching East Texas in June, 1716, Ramon and his missionaries established six missions and a presidio.⁴ Between 1716 and 1719, Ramon and his men were at one time in the southwestern corner of present-day Rusk County.⁵

¹ Carlos E. Castaneda, *Our Catholic Heritage in Texas*, I, 363.

² *Ibid.*, 369; see also map at the end of the book.

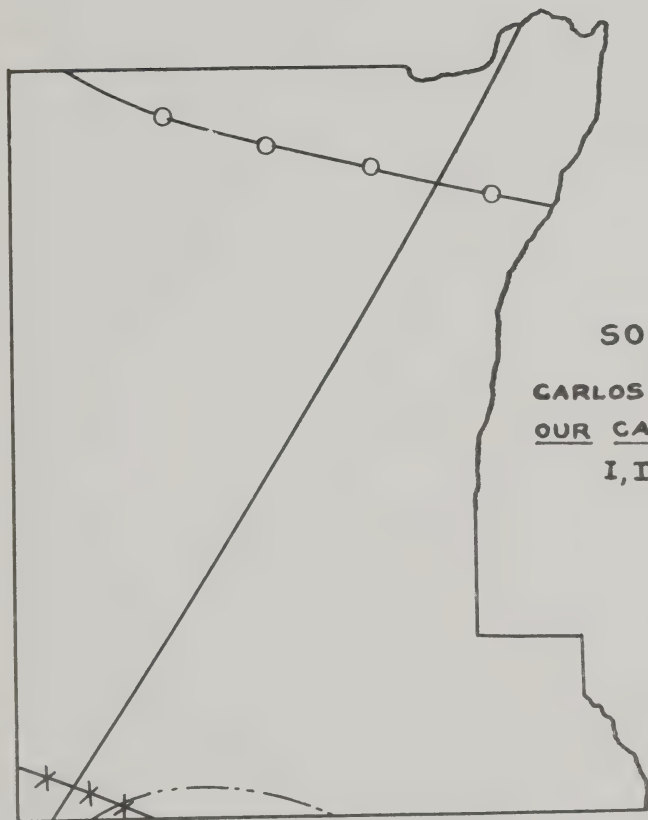
³ *Ibid.*, II, 38.

⁴ *Ibid.*, 58-61.

⁵ *Ibid.*, see map at the end of the book.

SPANISH EXPLORATIONS

IN RUSK COUNTY 1691-1788



SOURCE :

CARLOS E. CASTAÑEDA,
OUR CATHOLIC HERITAGE,
I, II, IV, V .

—— ROUTE OF DOMINGO TERÁN DE LOS RÍOS 1691.

- - - - ROUTE OF CAPTAIN DOMINGO RAMÓN 1716-1719.

X X ROUTE OF PADRE FRAY JOSEPH FRANCISCO CALAHORRA Y SAENZ 1760.

○ ○ ROUTE OF PEDRO VIAL 1788.

Padre Fray Joseph Francisco Calahorra y Saenz, Franciscan missionary in East Texas for more than twenty years, crossed the southwestern corner of Rusk County in September, 1760. He continued as far as the Tehuacana Indian villages on the upper Sabine River, where he met a delegation of Taovayas Indians for a peace meeting.⁶

Pedro Vial, commissioned by the governor of New Mexico to explore a route from Santa Fe to Natchitoches, Louisiana, crossed the northern part of Rusk County probably in August, 1788.⁷

Prior to the Texas Revolution the territory of Texas was divided into three departments, the area east of the Trinity River constituting the department of Nacogdoches out of which Rusk County was later created. The department of Nacogdoches gave permission for settlement and approved applications for land grants.

Anglo-American emigration into Rusk County most probably came by way of Trammel's Trace, sometimes described as an early Indian trail and sometimes as a horse path.⁸ Named for Nicholas Trammel, who is supposed to have run stolen horses from Arkansas to Texas as early as 1813, and who, from 1820 to 1830, operated a ferry on the Old San Antonio Road crossing of the Trinity River, the trail ran from Arkansas to Nacogdoches.⁹

In many instances Trammel cut the path as he proceeded, and after crossing the Sabine River he came into present northeastern Rusk County as far as Tatum; then he turned and went through what became the Daniel Martin league of land in 1835, to Pinehill. Turning southwest at this point, Trammel went due south until he came to Nacogdoches.¹⁰

Trammel's Trace became a permanent route for much traffic and was used as the main highway for travelers from Harmony Hill to Marshall. When Rusk County was created from Nacogdoches County in 1843, Trammel's Trace was made the eastern boundary of Rusk County.¹¹

The earliest grant issued for land in what now comprises Rusk County was made to William Elliott on March

⁶ *Ibid.*, IV, 142; see also map at the end of the book.

⁷ *Ibid.*, V, 166; see also map at the end of the book.

⁸ *Monuments Erected . . . to Commemorate the Centenary of Texas Independence*, 198.

⁹ *Texas Almanac*, 1945, p. 306.

¹⁰ Julia Gill, "Harmony Hill," *Junior Historian*, II, Number 5, p. 9.

¹¹ H. P. N. Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, II, 859.

22, 1829.¹² The grant consisted of one league and was situated south of the present community of Lawsonville in the southeastern portion of the county. The grant was made under the Law of Colonization of March 24, 1825,¹³ and was given final approval by Jose Ygnacio Ybarbo, constitutional alcalde of Nacogdoches.

The second land grant was made to Thomas Williams, who stated in his request dated February 20, 1827, that he had settled on the Angelina River in 1822.¹⁴ He also stated that "he presented himself and his sons to Colonel Pedro Elias Bean for service during the past revolution of Nacogdoches."¹⁵ The grant given to Thomas Williams on May 22, 1829, consisted of one league and was located on land which now comprises the Mount Enterprise vicinity in south central Rusk County.

One other land grant made in 1829 was issued to Leonard Williams, brother of Thomas Williams. Approved on March 28, 1829, the grant consisted of one league and was located north of and adjacent to the Thomas Williams grant.¹⁶

The Law of April 6, 1830,¹⁷ passed by the Mexican government to prevent further immigration from the United States into Texas, brought a stop to the issuance of land grants for more than three years. In November, 1833, however, the Mexican Congress repealed the portion of the Law of April 6, 1830, which had prohibited immigration.¹⁸ Two land grants were issued for land in Rusk County in 1833: one grant to Joseph Durst on May 18 for two leagues of land on the Angelina River, and one grant to Henry Stockman on August 7 for one league on the west side of the Angelina River. On October 30, 1834, William Williams received the only land grant made during that year. The Williams grant was approved by David G. Burnet, *empresario* at Nacogdoches at the time.¹⁹

¹² Translation of Mexican Land Grants, XXXVIII, 1365, M.S., General Land Office, Austin, Texas.

¹³ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, I, 125-133.

¹⁴ Translations, XXXVIII, 508.

¹⁵ *Ibid.* This was most probably the Fredonian Rebellion in 1826.

¹⁶ *Ibid.*, 531.

¹⁷ Excellent accounts of this law may be found in Eugene C. Barker, *The Life of Stephen F. Austin* (1926), pp. 296-328; Alleine Howren, "Causes and Origin of the Decree of April 6, 1830," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XVI, 378-422.

¹⁸ Barker, *The Life of Stephen F. Austin*, 435.

¹⁹ Translations, XIX, 847.

From May 2, to November 23, 1835, forty-three land grants were issued in what comprises present-day Rusk County.²⁰ Most of the grants were made to Anglo-Americans, but at least sixteen were made to Mexicans. Five grants were made to Mexican widows with children. Robert W. Smith, who later fought in the battle of San Jacinto and served as first sheriff of Rusk County, was issued a grant for one-fourth league on May 13, 1835.²¹ On October 28, 1835, Haden H. Edwards, **empresario** who brought a number of families into East Texas and later became a leader in the Fredonian Rebellion, was given a land grant in what now comprises the northern portion of Rusk and southern portion of Gregg counties. The Edwards grant was approved by George W. Smyth, land commissioner at Nacogdoches, who also approved nineteen other grants for land in present-day Rusk County. Most grants were made for land on the Angelina and Sabine rivers, and this would indicate that early settlement was heaviest in the southwestern and northeastern parts of the county. Lack of information has made it difficult to estimate any population figures for the county before the Texas Revolution.

The last land grant issued under the Mexican jurisdiction in present-day Rusk County was made to Mary A. O. Mariotini on November 23, 1835. Although no additional land grants were made until after the battle of San Jacinto, most probably there were other settlers coming into the region before this. A number of participants in the battle of San Jacinto, including Robert W. Smith, Alfred Henderson Wyly, Henry Chapman, and Jesse Walling, were given land grants in what became Rusk County.²²

Settlement following the battle of San Jacinto was on the increase, but the Cherokee Indians proved a threat to the vicinity. In 1839 the Cherokees were occupying the area which is bounded on the west by the Neches River, on the south by the Old San Antonio Road, and on the north by the Sabine River.²³ This is territory out of which Cherokee and Smith counties were created. The Cherokees, in 1839, were allied with the Shawnee Indians,

²⁰ See General Land Office Map of Rusk County, Texas, July, 1932; Abstract of all Original Texas Land Titles, 841-860.

²¹ Translations, XVIII, 255.

²² Sam Houston Dixon and Louis Wiltz Kemp, *The Heroes of San Jacinto*, 343, 350, 351.

²³ John H. Reagan, "The Expulsion of the Cherokees from East Texas," *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*, I, 38.

who had their principal village near the present town of Henderson.²⁴

For several years trouble had been growing between the Indians and the whites. The Indians had early obtained squatter's rights to the land from the Spanish authorities, and the Indians had been promised title to the land by the Consultation of 1835. Sam Houston and John Forbes, representing the Provisional Government, made a treaty with the Cherokees on February 23, 1836. The Cherokees and their associated bands were given title to lands between the Angelina and Sabine rivers and northwest of the Old San Antonio Road, but the treaty was later declared null and void.²⁵

In May, 1839, a letter was found in the possession of Manuel Flores exposing plans by the Mexican government to enlist the Cherokees against the Texas settlers.²⁶ The discovery of this letter along with several massacres, the Killough family massacre in particular,²⁷ brought about a determination to expel the Cherokees. This resulted in the battle of the Neches, fought on July 15 and 16, 1839, a few miles west of Tyler, in present Henderson County.²⁸ The Texans, numbering approximately 500, were under the command of Kelsey H. Douglass and included David G. Burnet, General Albert Sidney Johnston, Willis H. Landrum, Thomas J. Rusk, and Edward Burleson. The Cherokees, numbering perhaps seven or eight hundred, were led by Chief Bowles. John H. Reagan gives the following account of a meeting held between the Texans and Chief Bowles shortly before the battle:

On the day appointed, Agent Lacy returned to the residence of Chief Bowles, accompanied by Corda, the interpreter, and by Dr. Jowers and myself. We were again invited to the spring, as upon our first visit. The grave deportment of Chief Bowles indicated that he felt the seriousness of his position. He told Mr. Lacy that there had been a meeting of the chiefs and head men in council; that his

²⁴ *Monuments Erected . . . to Commemorate the Centenary of Texas Independence*, 125.

²⁵ John H. Reagan, "The Expulsion of the Cherokees from East Texas," *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*, I, 40. For an examination of the treaties of the period see Dorman H. Winfrey (ed.), *Texas Indian Papers, 1825-1843*.

²⁶ A. K. Christian, "Mirabeau Buonaparte Lamar," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XXIV, 76.

²⁷ For an account of this see Charles Stewart, "The Killough Massacre," *Junior Historian*, XI, Number 1, pp. 17-18.

²⁸ J. W. Wilbarger, *Indian Depredations in Texas*, 172.

young men were for war; that all who were in the council were for war, except himself and Big Mush; that his young men believed they could whip the whites; that he knew the whites could ultimately whip them, but that it would cost them ten years of bloody frontier war. He inquired of Mr. Lacy if action on the President's demand could not be postponed until his people could make and gather their crops. Mr. Lacy informed him that he had no authority or discretion beyond what was said in the communication from the President. The language of Chief Bowles indicated that he regarded this as settling the question, and that war must ensue. He said to Mr. Lacy that he was an old man (being then eighty-three years of age, but looking vigorous and strong), and that in the course of nature he could not live much longer, and that to him it mattered but little. But he added that he felt much solicitude for his wives (he had three) and for his children; that if he fought, the whites would kill him; that if he refused to fight, his own people would kill him. He said he had led his people a long time, and that he felt it to be his duty to stand by them, whatever fate might befall him.²⁹

In the battle which followed this meeting the Cherokees were routed and Chief Bowles was killed.³⁰ With the victory at the battle of the Neches, Indian troubles virtually ended in East Texas. Settlement of the area could continue.

²⁹ John H. Reagan, "The Expulsion of the Cherokees from East Texas," *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*, I, 41-42.

³⁰ Chief Bowles was killed by Robert W. Smith, whose father-in-law, Jesse Watkins, had been killed by the Cherokees. Smith took Bowles' sword, a gift made to the chief by Sam Houston, and presented it to the Masonic Lodge in Henderson. Loaned to Colonel James H. Jones during the Civil War, the sword was afterwards returned to the Masonic Lodge, where it remained until 1890, when it was presented to the Cherokee Nation in Oklahoma. Mary Ann Broome, "Captain Robert W. Smith," *Junior Historian*, IX, Number 1, p. 19; Dixon and Kemp, *Heroes of San Jacinto*, 350; Dorman H. Winfrey, "Chief Bowles of the Texas Cherokees," *Chronicles of Oklahoma*, XXXII, 29-41.

RUSK COUNTY LAND GRANTS BEFORE THE TEXAS REVOLUTION

Names of Grantees	Date of Title	Contents	Colony or		Situation
			Commissioner		
Elliott, William	March 22, 1829	1 League	J. Y. Ybarbo		on the Angelina River
Williams, Thomas	March 24, 1829	1 League	J. Y. Ybarbo		on the Angelina River
Williams, Leonard	March 28, 1829	1 League	J. Y. Ybarbo		on the Angelina River
Durst, Joseph	May 18, 1833	2 Leagues	J. Y. Ybarbo		on the Angelina River
Stockman, Henry	August 7, 1833	1 League	J. Y. Ybarbo		w. side of the Angelina
Williams, William	October 30, 1834	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Falcon, Josefa Perez	May 2, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Reagan, William	May 4, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Gonzales, Maria Sinforosa	May 9, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Huejas, Ma Falcona	May 9, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Chambers, Jesse H.	May 12, 1835	$\frac{1}{4}$ League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Gonzales, Romano	May 12, 1835	$\frac{1}{4}$ League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Smith, Robert W.	May 13, 1835	$\frac{1}{4}$ League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Reel, Henry	May 15, 1835	$\frac{1}{4}$ League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Reel, Daniel	May 16, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Martinez, Jose Maria	May 23, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Gagne, Jean Baptiste	May 25, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Clark, William	June 17, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Latham, James	June 18, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
Roth, Jacob	June 18, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
May, George	June 20, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina
McDonald, Thomas	June 20, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet		waters of the Angelina

McCune, James	July 18, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet	waters of the Angelina
Menchaca, Jose Nasario	August 4, 1835	1/4 League	David G. Burnet	waters of the Angelina
Jackson, Thomas J.	August 5, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet	waters of the Angelina
Piburn, John	August 7, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet	waters of the Angelina
Lee, Isaac	August 13, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	S. bank of the Sabine River
Mansola, Juan Bautista	August 15, 1835	1/3 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Walling, John	August 15, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Sabine River
Vina (de la) Juana Camunes	August 24, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Cordova, Francisco	August 26, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Pru, Maria Josefa	August 26, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Pena, Marie Valvarde	August 27, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Cadena, Juana B.	August 28, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Ximenes, Juan	August 31, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Simpson, Dinsmore	September 5, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Castro, Francisco	September 7, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Brewer, William	September 9, 1835	1/3 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Vidales, Manuel	September 11, 1835	1/3 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Sabine
Romero, Manuel Antonio	September 16, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Sabine
McClain, James	October 12, 1835	1 Labor	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Obar, Thomas	October 13, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Sabine
Williamson, Russel	October 13, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Sabine
Rio, Simon	October 17, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Sabine
Allison, William F.	October 19, 1835	1/4 League	David G. Burnet	waters of the Angelina
Edwards, Haden H.	October 28, 1835	1 League	David G. Burnet	waters of the Angelina
Martin, Daniel	November 18, 1835	1/3 League	Geo. W. Smyth	waters of the Angelina
Mariotini, Mary A. O.	November 23, 1835	1 League	Geo. W. Smyth	six miles from Shawnee Village

CHAPTER III

COUNTY ORGANIZATION AND DEVELOPMENT TO 1860

Two recent local historians of East Texas, Dabney White and T. C. Richardson, point out that the settlement of the area which became Rusk County proceeded rapidly after the defeat of the Cherokee Indians in the battle of the Neches.¹ As early as 1832 a settlement had been made at Mount Enterprise.² In 1838 Captain W. A. Miller, a native of Georgia, had settled near the present site of Henderson, the community being known at the time as Gibsontown.³

Most of the territory which comprises the present area of Rusk County was created as a "judicial" area called Smith County on February 1, 1842.⁴ The territory known as the judicial county of Smith was apparently never organized, because acts attempting to create judicial counties were declared unconstitutional in 1842 in the case of **Stockton vs. Montgomery**.⁵

In 1842, in the area which was to comprise Rusk County, there was sufficient population to separate from Nacogdoches County. On January 16, 1843, the following act creating Rusk County was approved by the Congress of the Republic of Texas:

¹ Dabney White and T. C. Richardson, *East Texas, Its History and Its Makers*, III, 1211; see also Barnes F. Lathrop, *Migration Into East Texas, 1835-1860*. A study of the four central counties of Cherokee, Henderson, Nacogdoches and Smith shows a moderate increase in population from June, 1840, through May, 1844. The big increase in population came after annexation. See Table 12, p. 62, and Figure 4, p. 63.

² *Henderson Daily News*, June 30, 1936.

³ *Ibid.*, November 30, 1938.

⁴ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, II, 759-761. This Smith County is not to be confused with the present Smith County, because no part of the territory is the same. See also Seymour V. Connor, "The Evolution of County Government in the Republic of Texas," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, LV, 163-200.

⁵ James Wilmer Dallam, *A Civil Digest of the Texas Reports*, 473. The act was declared unconstitutional principally because judicial counties were not represented in the Congress of the Republic of Texas, while the Constitution of 1836 specified that each county was entitled to at least one representative in the House of Representatives.

An Act Creating the County of Rusk

Section 1. Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the Republic of Texas in Congress assembled, That from and after the passage of this act, all that portion of the county now included in the county of Nacogdoches, within the following limits, viz: Beginning at a point due North, and sixteen miles from Nacogdoches; thence due East to the Attoyac creek; thence due West (retracing the last line thirty miles); thence due North to the Sabine river; thence down the Sabine river to the crossing of Trammel's trace, South and West, to where said trace crosses the West boundary line of J. W. Adams' league; thence due South to the Attoyac; thence with the meanderings of said Attoyac, to the place of beginning, be, and the same is hereby constituted a county.

Sec. 2. Be it further enacted, That the above described county shall be known and styled by the name of Rusk County; and that the first Monday in March next is hereby set apart for the election of five commissioners, to select for the county seat of said county; and the place selected by said commissioners, shall be the county seat of said county, and shall be styled "Henderson"; and all voters, qualified to vote for members of Congress, shall be entitled to vote for said commissioners, and it shall be, and is hereby made the duty of said commissioners, to select said site within five miles of the center of said county.

Sec. 3. Be it further enacted, That the commissioners, so selected, shall have the right to purchase, or receive by donation, any quantity of land, not exceeding six hundred and forty acres, as will be to the interest of said county in erecting public buildings, and such other expenses as are incident to the same; and a majority of said board of commissioners shall have power to fill all vacancies which may occur in said board, until otherwise provided by law.

Sec. 4. Be it further enacted, That the county of Rusk be attached to, and form a part of the fifth Judicial District of this Republic; and all causes now pending in the county, of which said county is formed, in which the defendants reside in said county, shall be transferred to said county, for trial and adjudication.

Sec. 5. Be it further enacted, That on the first

Monday in March next, any two Justices of the Peace, in said Rusk county, shall be authorized to hold an election for all county officers, in accordance with the laws now in force, regulating elections; and shall make their returns to the Secretary of State in twenty days from the time of such election.

Sec. 6. Be it further enacted, That the Probate Judge, and all county officers, of said county, shall immediately enter upon the discharge of the duties of his office, under the authority of a certificate of election, until his commission shall issue from the State Department.

Sec. 7. Be it further enacted, That the Probate Judge shall immediately lay off said county into a convenient number of beats, and cause elections to be held immediately therein for Justices of the Peace and constables; said elections to be held by any two free-holders of the beat; the returns of said election to be made within twenty days to the State Department.

Sec. 8. Be it further enacted, That the time of holding the inferior courts for said county, shall be on the fourth Monday of January, April, July and October of each year; and that the time of holding the District Court of said county shall be on the.....day of.....of each year.

Sec. 9. Be it further enacted, That the said county of Rusk shall be entitled to one representative in Congress; who shall be elected at the same time, and in the same manner, that such representatives are elected in other counties of this Republic; and the voters of said county shall vote for a Senator as heretofore, and returns thereof shall be made to the county of Nacogdoches; and that Nacogdoches county shall hereafter be entitled to one representative in Congress; and that this act take effect from and after its passage.

Approved, 16th Jan., 1843.⁶

The county was named for General Thomas J. Rusk, Secretary of War under Sam Houston and later United States Senator.⁷ The commissioners called for in the act creating the county met on September 23, 1843, and made the following report:

We, the undersigned Commissioners elected for the purpose of selecting and locating the county

⁶ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, II, 859.

⁷ Z. T. Fulmore, *The History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, 117.

cite of Rusk County have had said County boundaries surveyed and the said center of said county ascertained by the surveyor, to wit; J. N. Brown and finding the location permanently made by us is situated within the limits prescribed by law have proceeded and located said county cite near the residence of Thomas Timmons about one mile south of the center of said county; given under our hand and seal this 23rd day of Sept. A. D. 1843;

Signed

James Smith

John Walling

Robt. W. Smith ⁸

Five commissioners appointed to acquire land and to establish the county seat were: Robert L. Lane, Taylor Brown, John C. Miller, James Smith, and John Walling. About the same time five justices of the peace were elected to administer the laws. These justices included Archibald H. Watkins, Solomon M. Grigsby, A. G. Dupey, William Blackburn, and W. C. Kelly. These five justices elected as chief justice Archibald H. Watkins, who became the highest judicial officer of the county.⁹

The first town lots were sold in a public sale on May 3, 1844. Lots were sold on one and two years credit with notes and securities given. Following are the first purchasers of Henderson lots and the amount paid:

G. W. S. Tipps, \$100; J. P. Grigsby, \$80; Dooley and Baird, \$193; John W. Jones, \$250; J. A. S. Parsons, \$147; A. J. S. Miller, \$40; Elijah Allen, \$25; D. Gage, \$118; K. H. Muse, \$220; David Wood, \$25;; D. W. Reeves, \$64; W. D. Henry, \$71; Arch Graham, \$77; Nelson Williamson, \$93; N. B. Irwin, \$55; W. F. Addison, \$183; Joseph P. Smith, \$102; James W. Johnston, \$90; John Moffett, \$75; Taylor Brown, \$70; W. B. Ochiltree, \$152; L. B. Ross, \$111; D. T. Whitman, \$133; S. M. Hyde, \$89; K. H. Muse, \$80; James Hutton, \$71; Wm. M. Ross, \$100; R. L. Lane, \$141; John C. Miller, \$161; J. P. Smith, \$100; James Smith, \$225; Taylor Brown, \$41; Wm. M. Ross, \$52; A. H. Watkins, \$50; Elijah Allen, \$75.¹⁰

On May 8, 1844, the city commissioners met and recorded:

Whereas pursuant to an act creating the County of Rusk, approved Jan. 16, 1843, certain commis-

⁸ Records, 1844, Rusk County, M.S., 5, County Clerk's Office, Henderson, Texas.

⁹ *Ibid.*, 7.

¹⁰ *Ibid.*, 2.

sioners were elected in said county to locate the county seat of Justice, therein and whereas the election though not holden or any provided for by said statute aforesaid was legalized by such plenitury act approved Jan. 3rd 1844. And whereas said commissioners have proceeded to locate the seat of Justice of said county and lay off a town site on a tract acquired for the purpose, was the residence of General James Smith in said County.¹¹

On June 22, 1844, a contract for the erection of a jail was let to W. N. Henson. The jail was to be completed by January 1, 1845, and to be paid for out of the first collections made from notes given in payment of lots sold on May 8.

The commissioners met on August 10, and entered on their reports:

It is ordered by the board that the citizens be allowed to cut the timber out of the two main streets, fifteen feet each way from the center of street, and to cut all the timber in the alleys by cutting the stumps even with the ground, but it is forbidden for any citizen to cut timber off any street on which abutting lots have not been sold.¹²

After the commissioners selected the site which became the county seat of Henderson, the town was incorporated on February 1, 1845, under the provisions of the following act:

**An Act
For the Incorporation of the town of Henderson,
in the County of Rusk**

Section 1. Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the Republic of Texas in Congress assembled, That the citizens of the town of Henderson, be, and they are hereby declared a body corporate and politic, under the name and style of the "corporation of the town of Henderson," who shall have the power of suing and being sued, pleading and being impleaded, and to hold and dispose of real and personal property: Provided, such real estate is situated within the limits of said corporation.

Sec. 2. Be it further enacted, That it shall be the duty of the citizens of the said corporation, to elect eight Aldermen and a Mayor, who shall be ex-officio, a Justice of the Peace, a Treasurer and

¹¹ Ibid., 9.

¹² Ibid., 11.

secretary

Approved, February 1st, 1845.¹³

The commissioners early discovered that the original tract of land bought from General James Smith was not sufficient for the townsite and began negotiation with William B. Ochiltree for additional land. On November 3, 1845, the following deed was drawn up:

The Republic of Texas;
The County of Rusk:

For and in consideration of the high esteem in which I hold the good citizens of Rusk County as well as my truly friend James Pinckney Henderson as well as for and in consideration of the sum of \$1.00 to me in hand paid by the Commissioners of the town of Henderson, the receipt whereof I do hereby acknowledge, I have bargained, sold, given, granted, and released and do by these present bargain, sell, give, grante and forever release unto commissioners aforesaid, their successors and assigns, all that portion of the present town of Henderson situated on a certain labor of land conveyed to me by James H. Starr, agent and attorney in fact for Parmelee Starr, which labor was surveyed as the headright of Franklin Carr, deceased, to have and to hold unto the said commissioners and their legal assigns, forever, fee simple with this only reservation that the name of said town be forever retained; if it should ever be changed the land hereby conveyed to revert to me or my heirs; to witness thereof I have hereunto affixed my seal, this 3rd day Nov. A. D. 1845.

Signed Wm. B. Ochiltree.

Witnessed, James A. S. Parsons, R. R. Ray¹⁴

The land donated by Ochiltree consisted of five acres north of what is, in 1960, the public square, and it included the site on which the present courthouse is located. The same date Ochiltree made his contribution in land, the city commissioners acquired an additional tract of land from James Smith, Francis Timmons, and Thomas Timmons for which they paid \$500.¹⁵

On December 27, 1845, the city commissioners met and passed the following resolution:

Resolved that the majority of the board of commissioners present, believing it for the best interest of the town that there be a change made in the

¹³ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, II, 1122.

¹⁴ Records, 1844, Rusk County, 24.

¹⁵ *Ibid.*

plan of said town do hereby order and decree that a public square be laid off to be 70 yards square so that the well now known as the "public well" be in the center of said square and that the courthouse of said County of Rusk be placed in the center of the square.

Signed

James Smith
H. C. Vansickle
Richard Magee¹⁶

Population figures for the early years after the creation of Rusk County are not available, but the indications are that the increase was rapid. In 1845 the post office department of the Republic of Texas included Henderson on the postal route between Nacogdoches to Marshall.¹⁷

With the outbreak of the Mexican War in 1846, the county responded with the Rusk County Company of Mounted Volunteer Riflemen. The company was raised by Captain John McClarty and the following account has been given:

The company performed a march of over two hundred miles, the distance from Henderson to Lynchburg, without tents or camp conveniences of any kind, under the direction of an officer who had started upon the campaign without one dollar in cash to defray expenses; but by energy and appeals to the liberality of the citizens residing upon the line of march, succeeded in reaching the point of rendezvous, Galveston, and afterward the headquarters of the army of occupation in Mexico.¹⁸

Among those from Rusk County in the company was Ansel C. Heard, the overseer of the Julien Devereux plantation in the southwestern part of the county. In his diary on May 24, 1846, J. W. Devereux recorded the following:

Heard started on Kitty the mule on the expedition in the Rusk Company of Mounted Volunteer Riflemen for the Rio Grande to fight the Mexicans. We shall be without an overseer until Howerton arrives.¹⁹

On November 6, Devereux entered the following notation in his diary:

Lilly and Julien went to Barleys yesterday to

¹⁶ *Ibid.*, 21.

¹⁷ Harry Konwiser, *Texas Republic Postal System*, 23.

¹⁸ Wm. DeRyee and R. E. Moore, *The Texas Album, of the Eighth Legislature*, 1860, p. 119.

¹⁹ J. W. Devereux Diary for 1846, M.S., 28, Devereux Papers, in private collection of O. D. Weeks, Austin, Texas.

hear particulars of the Monteray battle. Barley sent me about fifty segars taken at the capture of Monteray. I have smoked real Mexican booty segars.²⁰

The first United States Census for Rusk County was made in 1850. The population for that year, surpassed only in the state by Harrison County with a population of 11,822, was 8,148, with a white population of 6,012 and a slave population of 2,136.²¹ A study of the census for 1850 shows some interesting facts. The average age of the head of a household was between thirty-six and thirty-seven years. Most of the families at the time had three and five children. Settlers came mostly from Tennessee, with Georgia, North Carolina, and South Carolina also making sizable contributions. Farming was first among professions listed. Other professions in almost equal rank were merchants, lawyers, and carpenters.²²

The census listed seventeen plantations containing ten thousand or more acres of land. General James Smith owned fifty-three thousand acres of land at that time, being the largest landholder in the county. According to writers Frank W. Johnson and Eugene C. Barker, "before the war, there were hundreds of plantations and a dozen or more village centers over the county."²³ A study of the census for 1850 would seem to substantiate the statement.

Several famous plantations were located at Henderson, including those of Major John Graham, General James Smith, Richard B. Tutt, Milton M. Boggess, and Judge William Wright Morris. Judge William Wright Morris, for whom Morris County has been named, built his home three miles north of Henderson in 1849. The following is a description of the home which stood until the 1940's when it was destroyed by fire:

The home had an ideal location: in a valley and near a spring. The square white clapboard house had four large, high-ceilinged rooms with a wide hall divided by double doors and a porch with square white columns across the front. The ends of the porch were cut off into small bedrooms for children. At the back of the house, an open passageway

²⁰ *Ibid.*, 44.

²¹ *Seventh Census of the United States: 1850*, p. 504.

²² *Seventh United States Census (1850)*, Population Schedule Microfilm, Archives Collection, University of Texas Library, Austin, Texas.

²³ Frank W. Johnson (Eugene C. Barker, ed.) *A History of Texas and Texans*, II, 903.

separated the large dining room from the kitchen, which formed an ell.

This ell was divided by a huge fireplace into two rooms, furnished with iron pots and pans for cooking. The negro slave, Aunt Ann, who never claimed her freedom after the Civil War, usually cooked her soda and buttermilk biscuits in a Dutch oven with fire coals on the lid. Such biscuits, served with homemade sausages, lye hominy, and fried apples, or sweet potatoes, sweet butter, and homemade peach preserves made a Sunday morning breakfast a long to be remembered meal. When a meal was served, a negro girl kept flies off the table with a brush of peacock feathers. In the spring there was the scent of the blooming locust trees and the red apple trees where the first June apples ripened

In front, the house had a small white picketed dooryard filled with white syringa, red rose bushes, and borders of small yellow jonquils; and the big yard of about two acres contained the carriage house, barn, and several oak trees, under which the grandchildren gathered and played on the rope swings. . . .

In the rear of the "Big House" were the slave quarters and a huge log smokehouse where the home-cured hams and bacon, dried fruits, potatoes, and all home-grown provisions were stored.

The house had been built near a spring flowing out of a hillside, and the mouth of the spring was walled with rock to insure a continuous supply of fresh running water. Here were kept the earthen crocks of freshly churned buttermilk, always ready for the traveler who stopped to rest and tell the Texas news.²⁴

Famous plantation homes were located not only near Henderson but also in other parts of the county. At Tatum the show place was the Tatum Home, built near Trammell's Trace by Albert Tatum in 1848. Tatum was wealthy, possessed many slaves, and had lands so extensive that the boundaries were "out of gunshot sound of the mansion."²⁵

The following is a description of the Tatum House:

The Tatum House was a big three-storied structure with six tall columns across the front and a smaller entrance porch in the center. The kitchen was, of course, off from the house.

Even now, the house is a remarkable one. The

²⁴ Mrs. Ned B. Morris, "Judge William Wright Morris: A Pioneer Homemaker," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, L, 396-398.

²⁵ Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagcd.



Tatum House

entrance door consists of four wide panels, opening into a hall, 20 by 38 feet, with the stair rising from the back of the hall. The doorway at the back with enormous transoms is quite as well executed as that at the front.

The hall was frequently used for dances and other festivities, and along a painted panel between two doors was a novel guest roll. Each guest was asked to write his or her name on the painted surface. The Tatums held "open house" so the number of names climbed into the thousands. (A later owner cleaned the panel.)

Two big twenty-foot rooms with marbelized mantels were on either side of the hall, and the same floor plan was followed in the rooms above

In the back premises, there still stands part of the house of logs which served as a temporary home while the present house was being built. The "quarters" for the slaves consisted of a single row of 80 cabins along the gentle slope just south of the house.²⁶

Southwest of the house is the family cemetery containing massive marble vaults in which Albert Tatum and members of his family are buried.

Fire damaged the third story of the Tatum house, and the roof and porch have been changed. The house, still standing in January, 1960, retains much of its old air of strength and permanence. Each year members of the Henderson High School Chapter 22 of Junior Historians of the Texas State Historical Association, make a tour of the home.

Another plantation home of importance was "Monte Verdi" in southwestern Rusk County. "Monte Verdi," meaning green wooded area, was built during the late 1840's or early 1850's by Julien Sidney Devereux. It was one of the showplaces in the county, and at one time the plantation consisted of approximately 10,000 acres of land and eighty slaves.²⁷

This home was standing in 1960 after a complete restoration was carried out by Mr. and Mrs. Emmett Lowry. The following is a 1940 description of the home:

The house even now is an imposing structure built after the plantation style of the 30's—a long,

²⁶ *Ibid.*

²⁷ Vol. G., Probate Records, Rusk County, Texas, M.S., 356, County Clerk's Office, Henderson, Texas.

tall, two-storied house with a porch upheld by tall columns. The balcony has since been removed, and square columns substituted for the carved round ones. The entrance door is a wide double one with sidelight and transom. The windows are unusually large—in fact, the whole pattern of the place is massive.

Many niceties of design appear, like the decoration along the cornice and the beautiful moulding along the windows and doors. The stair was a winding one formerly, but has been repaired along lines of least resistance. The North chimney is an original one made of homemade bricks fired in kilns located near the house.²⁸

Devereux's plantation was operated on a big scale, and he left many records and diaries which give a good idea of the work carried on there. His diary for 1849-1851 is an interesting one. Some excerpts are quoted:

Mem. of corn made in 1851

Finished hauling in the corn at the Monte Verdi plantation on the 25th day of September. Seventy waggon loads 35 loads with each waggon estimated at 70 bushels to each two loads or 35 bushels to each waggon making two thousand four hundred and fifty bushels (2450 bushels) and according to the house or crib room we have made as much and something more than in 1850.²⁹

January 30, 1852. Basinger, Howerton & myself went hunting in swamps. Killed a panther and bear. both very large & in fact the bear much the fattest that we have known of any this season. the days hunt was a very exciting one and required great exertions to save the bear which was finally killed in the East Angelina River.

Came home in the evening near night and found our little negro child "Patrick" dying, Dr. Allen attending on him, the poor little negro died an hour after dark. Also found our little son Albert quite sick with a high fever on him which continued all night.³⁰

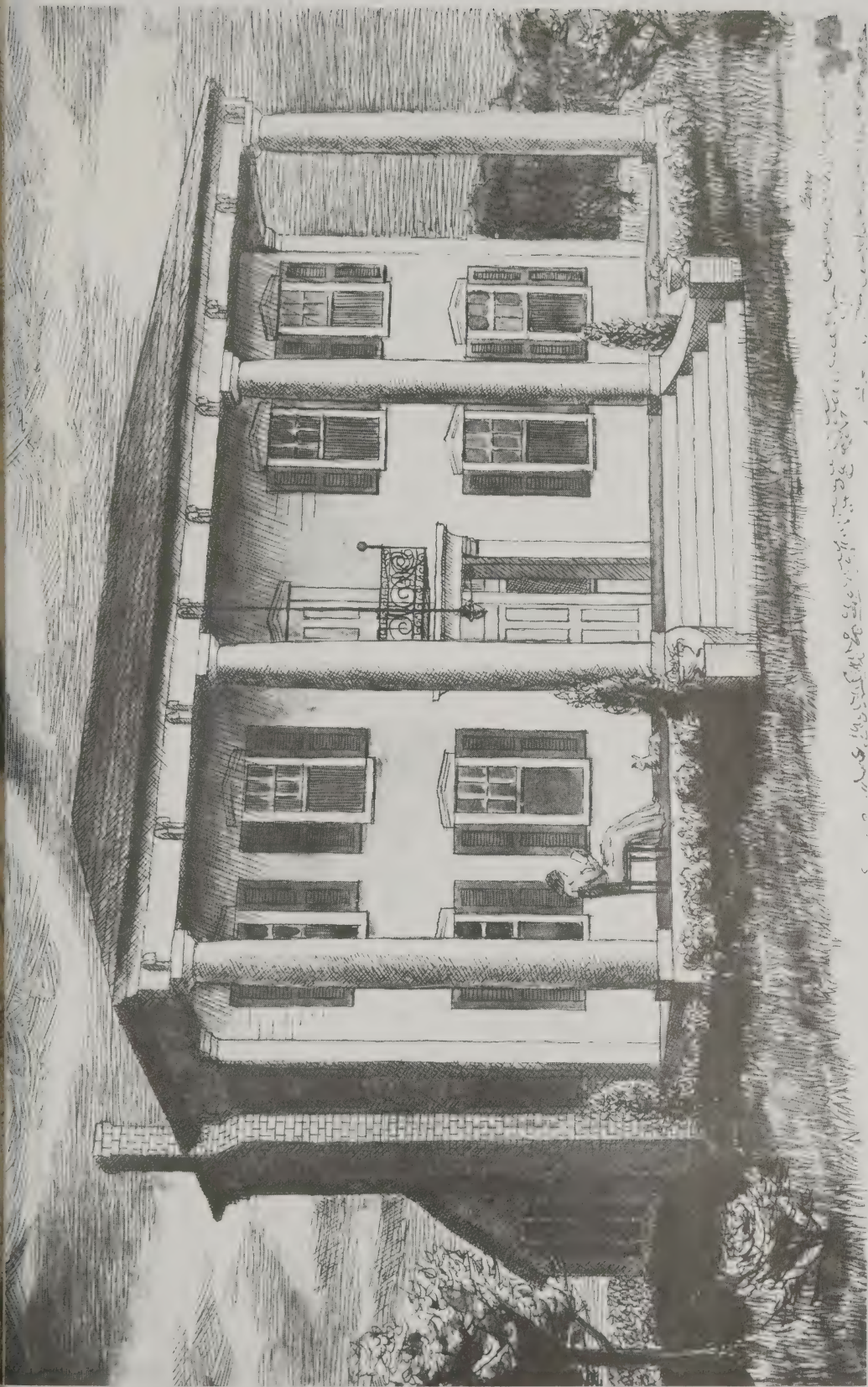
On August 3, 1850, Devereux recorded the names of forty-one male slaves and thirty-three female slaves that he owned.

Julien S. Devereux died on May 1, 1856. His will, pro-

²⁸ Ibid.

²⁹ Julien S. Devereux Diary, 1849-1851, M.S., p. 24. Undated notes.

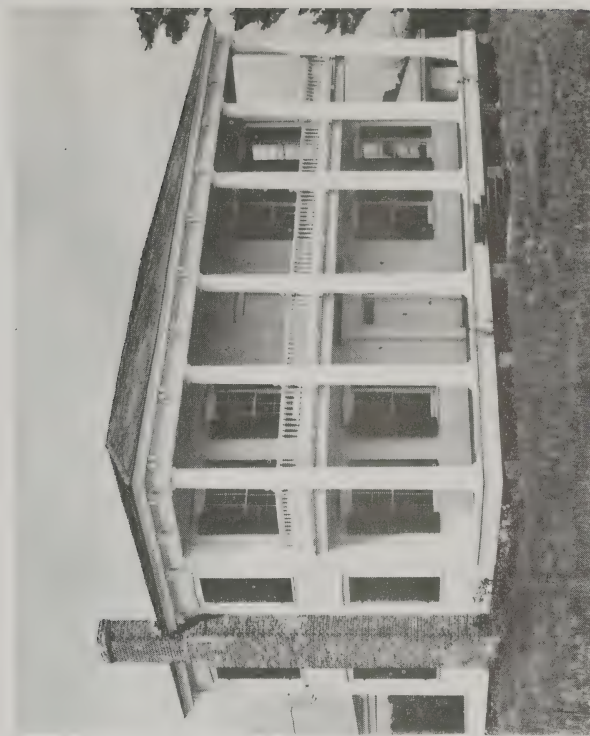
³⁰ Ibid., 67.



Artist's Conception of Monte Verdi During 1850's



Monte Verdi Before Restoration



Monte Verdi After Restoration

bated on July 10, is an interesting one. He gave minute directions for the management of the estate and directed that in no event must his slaves be sold to satisfy any debts. Two slaves, Scott and Tabby, were to be exempted from any further work and good care taken of them. The inventory of the Devereux plantation at the time revealed the following possessions:

- 10,721 acres of land
- 80 slaves
- 6 head horses
- 15 head mules
- 15 yoke oxen
- 300 head cattle
- 300 head hog
- 230 head sheep
- 16 head goats
- 4 road wagons
- 1 two horse wagon
- 1 pleasure carriage
- 2 gin stands
- 1 horse mill
- 1 set black smith tools
- 38 ploughs
- 21 pair blow gear
- 25 weeding hoes
- 14 grabing hoes
- 18 chopping axes
- 2 broad axes
- 12 log chains
- 8 iron wedges
- 4 bed steads
- 6 feather beds & furniture
- 6 cotton mattresses
- 1 dozen chairs
- 1 bureau
- 1 press (clothes)
- 1 safe or cupboard
- 1 lot of books
- 1 double barrel gun
- 2 rifle guns
- 2 pistols
- 1 repeter & 1 durenger
- 6 bake ovens
- 2 wash pots
- 2 cook pots
- 1 brass kettle
- \$1,912.40 total money ³¹

³¹ Vol. G., Probate Records, Rusk County, Texas, M.S., 356, County Clerk's Office, Henderson, Texas.

In 1857 the **Texas Almanac** reported that the United States Post Office Department listed twenty-two localities in Rusk County with post offices. Those localities listed were:

Alma
Anadarco
Bellevieu
Bunker Hill
Caledonia
Calhoun
Cambridge
Camden
Centre
Cotton Plant
Fredonia
Harmony Hill
Henderson
Millville
Mount Enterprise
Murvall
New Danville
New Salem
Pine Hill
San Cosma
San(d) Hill
Walling's Ferry ³²

With the possible exceptions of Anadarco and San Cosma, the localities have names of Anglo-Saxon origin.³³ Leading towns during the fifties included Henderson, Camden, Harmony Hill, Millville, Mount Enterprise, New Salem, and Pine Hill.

The same day the legislature of Texas approved the act incorporating the town of Henderson, February 1, 1845, an act was also passed to incorporate the Rusk County Academy at Henderson.³⁴ Jesse Smith and William B. Ochiltree were among the thirteen trustees, and James W. Flanagan received the contract to build the school.³⁵ Another school, Henderson Female College, opened in August, 1849, with five incorporators including M. D. Ector, M. D.

³² Records of the Post Office Department, M.S., Records of Appointments of Postmasters, The National Archives, Washington, D. C.; **Texas Almanac for 1857**, pp. 29-32.

³³ Varney Hawkins, "An Anglo-Saxon County," in **Texas Monthly**, II, Number 5, p. 693.

³⁴ Gammel, **Laws of Texas**, II, 1113.

³⁵ **Henderson Times**, February 17, 1938.

Graham, William Wright Morris, and A. B. Graham.³⁶ C. C. Shumate was principal from 1849 at least through 1855.³⁷ Fowler Institute, located in Henderson, was chartered by the Eastern Texas Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South, on January 26, 1850, and was named for Littleton Fowler, noted Methodist preacher.³⁸ Presidents of the school included W. P. Bewley, J. M. Price, and Napoleon W. Burks. Shortly after the outbreak of the Civil War the school closed.

There were two fraternal organizations in Henderson in 1849. The Masonic Lodge was organized in 1845, and the Sons of Temperance was organized about the same time. In May, 1849, the Henderson Masonic Lodge had General Sam Houston as guest. In his address he pointed out the beginnings of Masonry in Texas.³⁹ The Grand Lodge of the Sons of Temperance held its annual meeting in Henderson in October, 1849.⁴⁰

The town of Henderson was pictured by a writer in 1850 as follows:

Henderson, in Rusk County, is also an interesting town. Its situation is pleasant, and the appearance of the town is rapidly improving. The vicinity abounds with beautiful lakes of transparent water, which combined with other delightful scenery, renders Henderson a most desirable place of residence. The present population numbers about one thousand, and a very unanimous sentiment prevails in advancing the best interests of the community.

The town is surrounded by a very fertile body of land, which is rapidly becoming occupied with enterprising settlers. By improvements which are in operation for the navigation of the Sabine river, the portion of the country surrounding Henderson will soon be put in possession of all the advantages accruing from navigation.⁴¹

In 1849 Henderson had at least one newspaper, the **Texas Statesman**.⁴² During the 1850's the following papers were published: **Star-Spangled Banner**, edited by James W.

³⁶ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, IV, 336.

³⁷ *Texas Statesman* (Henderson), March 10, 1849; *Henderson Democrat*, June 2, 1855.

³⁸ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, III, 721.

³⁹ M. H. Marwil, "History of Clinton Lodge," *Henderson Daily News*, undated clipping in Mrs. J. E. Watkins' scrapbooks on Rusk County.

⁴⁰ *Henderson Daily News*, June 30, 1936.

⁴¹ Melinda Rankin, *Texas in 1850*, p. 112.

⁴² *Texas Statesman* (Henderson), March 10, 1849.

Flanagan; Henderson **Democrat**; **East Texas Times**; **Flag of the Union**; and **Southern Beacon**.⁴³

The **Flag of the Union**, on February 2, 1854, carried advertisements for sixteen Henderson lawyers including Oran M. Roberts, later governor of Texas. Most of the newspapers carried advertisements for firms in New Orleans and New York. Henderson was on the stagecoach run between Marshall and Nacogdoches, and on November 29, 1856, the Henderson **Democrat** carried the following:

Stages leave Marshall and Nacogdoches, tri-weekly and go through in forty-six hours by way of Henderson.

The same day an advertisement for a saloon read:

ICE! ICE! ICE!

B. F. McDonough has removed his splendid DRINKING SALOON into the East Room of the Brick Hotel. Persons desiring anything in the way of Ice Lemon Ades, Ice-Cocktails, Mint-Juleps, Wine-Sangeres, Peach-Brandy and Honey, or Cocktails and Drinks can be accommodated by giving him a call.

In 1857 a writer gave the following description of Henderson:

Henderson is the principal town, or city (of Rusk County) for it is a place of much size and note, having many fine brick buildings, school houses, churches, and other public edifices.⁴⁴

Henderson was not the only Rusk County town enjoying growth and prosperity in the 1850's. The town of Camden, located on a bluff on the south bank of the Sabine River in the northeast corner of the county, was important. Traffic from Jefferson and Marshall to Henderson and Crockett crossed the Sabine at the ferry there.⁴⁵ The vicinity had been settled in the 1830's, and for many years the ferry, Walling's Ferry, was run by the Walling family, one of whose members, Jesse Walling, fought in the battle of San Jacinto.⁴⁶ The town had the usual store buildings and saloons, a big two-story hotel, lodge buildings, and a Presbyterian church. The rich "bottom lands" along

⁴³ Texas Newspapers, A Union List of Newspaper Files, 1813-1939, p. 104; Burke's Texas Almanac and Immigrant's Handbook for 1881, p. 83.

⁴⁴ D. E. E. Braman, Braman's Information About Texas, 115.

⁴⁵ J. N. Thornton, "The Old Stagecoach Road to Camden," Henderson Times, June 1, 1938.

⁴⁶ Virginia Smith, "Camden—Old Ghost Town on the Sabine," Junior Historian, III, Number 6, p. 14.

Cherokee Bayou supported plantations of considerable size. Through the town of Camden ran one of the earliest telegraph lines in the state (1854).⁴⁷ The line connected Shreveport, Louisiana, with Henderson, Rusk, Crockett, Houston, and Galveston, Texas.

Another Rusk County town enjoying prosperity during the 1850's was Harmony Hill, located about fifteen miles northeast of Henderson. The town had been laid off on land belonging to John Kuykendall, rich planter who owned a thousand-acre plantation.⁴⁸ Situated in the fertile redlands, the town attracted planters and merchants and became an important trade center. Its nearness to Trammell's Trace, the Grand Bluff Road, and the Old Wire Road brought in much trade.

By 1860 Harmony Hill consisted of eight or ten stores, a small furniture factory, a blacksmith shop, two churches, a Masonic hall and school, and substantial homes built along the three main streets.⁴⁹

Millville, another prosperous town known in the forties as Liberty Hill, was about nine miles northeast of Henderson. Settled sometime in the thirties,⁵⁰ in 1853 the town was formally laid off. After the building of a water mill there by Enoch Hays and Willis Calloway, the town was called Millville. The town had a Masonic lodge, tannery, small furniture and wagon factory, several stores, and the two-story Log House Hotel, which catered to stage-coach passengers and other travelers.. On January 26, 1858, the Millville Male and Female Academy, located on land deeded by Jesse Walling, was incorporated.⁵¹

Mount Enterprise, situated in southern Rusk County, had been settled by Charlie Vinson and his brother in 1832.⁵² It was probably named for the new enterprise the Vinson brothers engaged in, operation of a store, and the fact that the store was situated near a slight elevation.

Lumbering was an early industry, and a furniture factory was in operation as early as 1850.⁵³ Many plantations were in the vicinity of Mount Enterprise before the Civil War.⁵⁴

⁴⁷ *Ibid.*, 15.

⁴⁸ Julia Gill, "Harmony Hill," *Junior Historian*, II, Number 5, p. 10.

⁴⁹ *Ibid.*

⁵⁰ Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagcd.

⁵¹ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, IV, 1250.

⁵² *Mount Enterprise Progress*, April 27, 1936.

⁵³ *Henderson Daily News*, November 30, 1938.

⁵⁴ Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagcd.

The Mount Enterprise Male and Female College operated from 1851 to 1855. On February 7, 1853, another school, the Mount Enterprise Male and Female Academy, was established.⁵⁵

New Salem, in southwestern Rusk County, was one of the earliest settlements.⁵⁶ Colonel John Pruitt was the first settler, and the town was named for Oscar Wilson in honor of his old home town in Victoria County.⁵⁷ In the 1850's there were several general merchandise stores, three saloons, a hotel, and livery stable. New Salem was headquarters for a stage line between Shreveport and San Antonio. A New Salem Academy was in operation in 1854.⁵⁸ The town had sufficient population to be incorporated on August 16, 1856.⁵⁹

Pinehill, in extreme eastern Rusk County, was first settled by "Uncle" Henderson Hillin in 1844.⁶⁰ It was named Pinehill for the many pine trees in the area.⁶¹ Although Pinehill was not incorporated until after the Civil War, the population was sizable in the 1850's.

The population of Rusk County showed increases during the fifties. The population in 1857 was 12,373, which was an increase of 4,225 over 1850.⁶² Rusk County at the time reported 430,966 assessed acres of land with value at \$1,326,000.⁶³ The **Texas Almanac for 1857** carried the following description of the county:

. . . Cotton and corn are the staple products, a bale of the former and from 25 to 30 bushels per acre of the latter being considered a good crop during favorable seasons. Peaches and some other varieties of fruit are cultivated, the former being generally abundant. Steam and other mills are found in all sections. Considerable enterprise exists among the people, and schools and churches are very well sustained. Spring and well water are quite pure and cool. Health is very good. Mail facilities are very

⁵⁵ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, III, 1382.

⁵⁶ *Jacksonville Progress*, January 21, 1934.

⁵⁷ *Henderson Daily News*, November 2, 1939.

⁵⁸ *Flag of the Union* (Henderson), February 2, 1854.

⁵⁹ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, IV, 624.

⁶⁰ Betty Duran, "Pinehill," *Junior Historian*, X, Number 4, p. 18.

⁶¹ The town was early known as "Rake Pocket." It was named by a person who thought he had been overcharged at a hotel and that it had raked his pocket. Oldtimers still go to "Rake Pocket" on Saturday afternoon. *Ibid.*

⁶² *Texas Almanac for 1858*, p. 43.

⁶³ *Ibid.*, 39.

good. Markets, at Shreveport and New Orleans, the former being the shipping point on Red River, about eighty miles distant from Henderson, the County Seat. This is a village of considerable size, many of the buildings being of brick, and also neatly constructed ones of wood; there are also a number of small villages, supported by the trade of the country surrounding them. Game is abundant, and easily obtained. White population is about 13,279—nearly all Americans. Henderson is the proposed terminus of the G. H. & H. R. (Galveston, Houston and Henderson Railroad), which will divert the trade of this and many other counties to Galveston, when constructed.⁶⁴

1152499

In 1858 the white population in Rusk County had grown to 8,413 and the slave population to 4,744. Total acres in cultivation at the time was 80,489 with the following breakdown: 37,532 acres of corn; 4,741 acres of wheat; 25,782 acres of cotton; 50 acres of sugar; and 12,384 acres in miscellaneous production.⁶⁵

The year 1859 shows further increases in population and property value. Statistics for that year include: 475,323 acres of land with a value of \$1,685,529; 4,967 slaves with a value of \$3,095,583; 3,330 horses with a value of \$318,107; and 13,535 cattle with a value of \$80,560. The aggregate taxable property was \$5,560,726.⁶⁶

The importance of Henderson and Rusk County in the 1850's may also be seen by the chartering of two railroads, the Eastern Texas Railroad and the Galveston, Houston, and Henderson Railroad Company. The Eastern Texas Railroad originated as the Henderson and Burkeville Railroad, chartered on February 10, 1852, and was to connect Burkeville, Newton County, with Henderson.⁶⁷ Prominent persons in Rusk County associated with the railroad were Julien S. Devereux, Jesse Walling, General James Smith, and James Winwright Flanagan. In 1853 the charter was changed to permit the line to run from the Gulf through Nacogdoches and Mount Enterprise. In 1856 the line was rechartered as the Mexico, Henderson, and Gulf, and a few miles of track were constructed at Pine Island Bayou north of Beaumont. Again on January 21, 1858, a new charter for the company was issued as the

⁶⁴ Texas Almanac for 1858, pp. 82-83.

⁶⁵ Texas Almanac for 1859, p. 210.

⁶⁶ Texas Almanac for 1860, p. 206.

⁶⁷ Gammel, Laws of Texas, III, 1145.

Eastern Texas Railroad. Provision was made that the road would extend from Sabine Pass to Henderson. Work was started in 1859, and slave labor was used. By 1861 twenty-five miles had been completed between Beaumont and Sabine Pass, and during the Civil War equipment was moved to Beaumont to prevent capture by Federal troops. The line eventually became a ghost railroad.

A second railroad of the 1850's, the Galveston, Houston, and Henderson Railroad Company, was chartered on February 7, 1853.⁶⁸ The road was to penetrate the timber belt of East Texas to Henderson. The line was completed between Houston and Galveston in January, 1860, but the Civil War prevented its extension to Henderson.⁶⁹ The Galveston, Houston, and Henderson line is still in operation and has been in existence under its original charter name longer than any other Texas railroad.

The rank Rusk County held among Texas counties in the years of 1857, 1859, and 1860, based on values in land, Negroes, horses, cattle, sheep, property, and the like is as follows:

1857:

Harrison County	\$7,037,126
Washington County	\$6,158,900
Brazoria County	\$4,649,613
Rusk County	\$4,468,233 ⁷⁰

1859:

Harrison County	\$8,321,604
Washington County	\$7,674,756
Rusk County	\$5,560,726
Brazoria County	\$5,443,477 ⁷¹

1860:

Harrison County	\$8,849,099
Galveston County	\$7,265,482
Brazoria County	\$7,130,543
Fort Bend County	\$7,045,221
Grimes County	\$6,968,095
Rusk County	\$6,494,175 ⁷²

By 1860 the population of Rusk County was the largest of any county in the state. The United States Census for 1860 gives the following breakdown of the four leading counties:

⁶⁸ Ibid., 1410; John A. Caplen, "The Old G. H. & H. Railroad," Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association, XI, 70.

⁶⁹ S. G. Reed, A History of the Texas Railroads, 75.

⁷⁰ Texas Almanac for 1858, pp.177-180.

⁷¹ Texas Almanac for 1860, pp. 204-207.

⁷² Texas Almanac for 1861, pp. 242-245.

	White	Slave	Total
Rusk County	9,670	6,132	15,803
Washington County	7,271	7,941	15,215
Harrison County	6,217	8,784	15,001
Bexar County	13,059	1,395	14,454 ⁷³

The prosperity Rusk County enjoyed during the 1850's began to decline in 1860 with the burning of Henderson on August 5 of that year. Further decline came with the Civil War and Reconstruction. It would be more than half a century—not until the discovery of oil in 1930—before Rusk County would enjoy again wealth and prosperity comparable to that known during the 1850's.

⁷³ Population of the United States in 1860, pp. 503-504.

CHAPTER IV

CIVIL WAR AND RECONSTRUCTION

The census of 1860, which was taken from June 6 through August 11, gives some indication of the prosperity which Rusk County had enjoyed in the late 1850's. Twenty-one persons reported estates of more than \$30,000. The census lists the names of those so reporting as follows:

Name	Age	Occupation	Value of Real Estate	Estate Personal Estate
R. H. Cumby	34	farmer	\$22,600	\$38,000
M. D. Ector	32	merchant		30,700
Webster Flanagan	27	merchant	4,300	47,350
John Foster	40	merchant		31,000
W. H. Street	47	merchant		34,000
Flanagan & Yates		merchants		60,000
C. E. Hall	40		8,000	55,800
S. A. Devereux (F)	33		70,000	66,000
Taylor Brown	34	farmer	42,674	50,000
J. W. Flanagan	54	lawyer	37,940	91,650
E. H. Flanagan (F)	31		11,200	57,150
Wiley Harris	37	farmer	11,090	32,000
S. W. March	35	M. D.	150,000	75,000
Allen Birdwell	58	farmer	10,844	37,850
Albert Tatum	56	farmer	12,000	50,000
Willie Watson	38	farmer	9,600	53,300
John Griffin	70	farmer	7,000	46,900
John Pruitt	56	farmer	18,750	70,800
J. G. Garland	30	farmer	16,500	35,500
Eli ?	51	farmer	10,000	70,000
A. C. Whatley	47	farmer	6,700	37,000 ¹

On Sunday night, August 5, a few days after the census had been completed in Henderson, the town burned. The fire began about eight o'clock in an old unoccupied shop immediately behind Wiggins, Hogg and Felton's Drug Store on the south side of the square. The whole south side of the square was in flames in a few minutes.²

It was believed that the fire was caused by an incendiary, because it was not the first fire to take place in

¹ Eighth United States Census (1860), Population Schedule (Microfilm), Archives Collection, University of Texas Library, Austin.

² Matagorda Gazette, August 22, 1860, quoting the Marshall Republican, August 11, 1860.

Texas during that year.³ The damage in Henderson was severe, the total loss being placed at \$220,000, of which \$8,500 was insured, leaving a net loss of \$211,500. Forty-three buildings were destroyed.⁴ Two newspapers, the **Texas New Era**, edited by S. G. and Leon Swan, and the **Star-Spangled Banner**, edited by James W. Flanagan, were destroyed. The Marshall **Republican** reported:

All from McDonough's Hotel to Smither's office, taking that entire block, and from Redwine's Store to Liken's corner, running back to the Presbyterian Church (which was saved) was consumed, including 10 stores, 2 drug stores, 8 or 10 law offices, 2 family groceries and many other buildings.⁵

Best accounts indicate that only one business house was left standing, and all supplies of groceries and provisions for the area were destroyed, including \$50,000 worth of goods which burned in the street after being removed from the stores.⁶ The fire came at a time of severe drouth; it was stated that no rain had fallen since February, and that "it was the hottest summer ever known in Texas, the temperature in July running up to 112 degrees in the shade."⁷

The account of the fire at Henderson received notices in many newspapers, not only in Texas and the Southwest but throughout the country. The following item appeared in the New York **World** on August 21, 1860:

INCENDIARISM IN TEXAS—ANOTHER GREAT FIRE

THE TOWN OF HENDERSON BURNT

A letter dated Houston, Texas, August 10, in the **Galveston Civilian** says: "A gentleman who passed through Henderson, Rusk County, on Monday morning last, reports that the town of Henderson was discovered to be on fire on Sunday night, 5th inst; and was almost entirely consumed. When he passed through all that was to be seen of the square was a smouldering embers, except one dwelling house that escaped the conflagration. The citizens put

³ For an account of fires in Dallas and other Texas towns see William W. White, "The Texas Slave Insurrection of 1860," *South-western Historical Quarterly*, LII, 259-285.

⁴ *State Gazette* (Austin), September 1, 1860, quoting *East Texas Times* (Henderson), date not given.

⁵ *Matagorda Gazette*, August 22, 1860, quoting *Marshall Republican*, date not given.

⁶ *Evening Picayune* (New Orleans), August 20, 1860, quoting *Galveston News*, August 16, 1860.

⁷ S. B. Barron, *The Lone Star Defenders*, 16; *Henderson Daily News*, March 13, 1939.

no faith in the reported conspiracy, and neglected to appoint a patrol or to set a watch."⁸

The *State Gazette* at Austin carried the following account of the investigation of the fire:

Henderson, August 14, 1860.

... A committee of fifty-two of the best citizens of the town and county, have been selected, have been in close session and correspondence with the neighboring counties since the first excitement occasioned by the fire and loss subsided. ... They believe that emissaries are throughout the state, directly under the control of the Abolition Aid Society of the North, and furnished by that organization with any requisite amount of means and money.

That their object is to produce a well digested plan, which by fire and assassination will finally render life and property insecure, and the slave by constant rebellion a curse to the master...⁹

The fire made such an impression on those in Henderson at the time that as late as 1951, ninety years after the catastrophe, there were still some Henderson residents who remembered details of the events. John S. Crow gave the following account:

I was about eight years old when Henderson burned in 1860. I went to town with my father the day after the fire. It burned every house as well as I recollect except the Flanagan brick building. There may have been the Davenport Hotel left. It cleaned Henderson up. I was looking for a knife—thought maybe I could find one somewhere. The destruction was a horrible sight to everybody except an eight year old boy. I remember I was barefooted and careful not to burn my feet.

I remember what my father said at the time. They thought a fellow named Green Herndon, a Union man, had hired a Negro woman to burn Henderson. Herndon was a Northerner and was a pronounced opponent of secession. On the Negro woman's testimony a mob gathered. They threw a loop around his neck, tied it to a saddle horse which went around the public square dragging Herndon to death. Then they hung the body to a tree and shot it full of holes. War was in preparation and people were in fits of anger.¹⁰

⁸ New York World, August 21, 1860.

⁹ State Gazette (Austin), September 15, 1860.

¹⁰ John S. Crow to D. W., February 22, 1951, University of Texas Archives. On March 5, 1951, Mr. Crow celebrated his ninety-ninth birthday in Henderson.

The other Henderson resident at the time of the fire was Alf Harris, a slave owned by Major John Graham. Harris recalled:

The fire burned at daytime and at night. It was a mighty big fire. It was such a big fire you could see a pin on the ground at night in my master's front yard two blocks away from the square. I think there was only one building left standing.¹¹

Herndon was buried in an unmarked grave in the Pine Grove cemetery, nine miles east of Henderson. According to some accounts, the Negro woman was hanged after she had given birth to a child sometime after the fire. She confessed that she had invented the story that Herndon had paid her to set the fire.¹² Other accounts state that a vigilance committee tried and found both Herndon and his Negro servant guilty, and they were hanged on the night of August 25.¹³

On January 8, 1861, an election was held in Rusk County for delegates to the Secession Convention held in Austin on January 28. Those elected to represent Rusk County were James R. Armstrong, A. P. Galloway, M. D. Graham, and W. C. Kelly.¹⁴

In accordance with provisions passed by the Secession Convention, Rusk County along with other counties in Texas, voted on the question of secession on February 23. The results tabulated in Austin on March 4 showed that in Rusk County 1376 persons had voted for secession, and 135 persons had voted against it.¹⁵ The vote for secession in Rusk County was the largest of any county in the state. Smith County ranked second with 1149 votes for secession.¹⁶

In the Confederate Congress at Montgomery, Alabama, Malcolm D. Graham of Rusk County, represented Texas in the House of Representatives. He served first as a member of the Committee on Ways and Means and later in February, 1864, as a member of a committee to establish a bureau of foreign supplies.¹⁷ In May, 1864, Jefferson

¹¹ Alf Harris to D. W., June 18, 1950, University of Texas Archives. On June 19, 1950, Harris celebrated his one hundred and seventh birthday.

¹² Henderson Times, November 25, 1937.

¹³ Daily Delta (New Orleans), September 12, 1860, quoting Henderson Times, date not given.

¹⁴ Ernest W. Winkler, Journal of the Secession Convention of Texas, 1861, p. 416.

¹⁵ Ibid., 89.

¹⁶ Ibid., 90.

¹⁷ Journal of the Confederate Congress, III, 799.

Davis appointed Graham as presiding judge advocate of the Trans-Mississippi Department with the rank of colonel.¹⁸

It is not known what results the burning of Henderson had on Rusk County's contribution in supplies and material to the Confederacy when the Civil War broke out the following year. As far as can be determined the county had no factories of any size making war materials, although some writers maintain that the county did operate factories on a considerable scale.¹⁹ An account of one phase of what took place in Henderson when the Civil War began has been described by John S. Crow:

When the war broke out the men got all the files they could find and went to the blacksmith shops and made knives and swords. There was much laughter and I remember they said, 'We'll whip those dam Yankees with axes and butcher knives.' Everybody was anxious to go.²⁰

Perhaps a true picture of the role Rusk County and East Texas played during the Civil War was recorded by Colonel Oran M. Roberts, several years a Henderson resident, in his chapter of the **Confederate Military History**.

Salt being a prime necessity for family use, salt works were established in eastern Texas, in Cherokee and Smith counties, and at Grand Saline in Van Zandt County, where before the close of the war there were about forty furnaces operating and turning out to supply the country hundreds of bushels of salt every day. In the west salt was furnished from the salt lakes. Iron works were established for making plows and cooking vessels near Jefferson, Rusk, and Austin, and perhaps at other places. At jug factories in Rusk and Henderson counties were made crude earthenware dishes, plates, cups and saucers, and bowls for family use, that were spread over the country. At other shops wagons were made and repaired, and in small domestic factories chairs, tables and other furniture were made. Shoe-shops and tailor-shops were kept busy all over the country. Substitutes for sugar and coffee were partially adopted, but without much success. By such devices the people of Texas became self-supporting, and being blessed with a fertile soil, plenty

¹⁸ *Ibid.*, IV, 27.

¹⁹ Dabney White and T. C. Richardson, *East Texas, Its History and Its Makers*, I, 204.

²⁰ John S. Crow to D. W., February 22, 1951, University of Texas Archives.

abounded everywhere within the State.²¹

Although Rusk County was probably not among the counties leading in material contributions for the Civil War, it is possible that it ranked among the first in the contribution of men for the fighting forces. With the largest population in the state in 1860,²² Rusk County, according to tradition, is supposed to have furnished more soldiers than any other county in the state.²³ Records in the Texas State Archives indicate that at least twelve companies were raised in Rusk County.²⁴

The first Rusk County company, mustered into service at Henderson on April 6, 1861, was commanded by Captain Milton M. Boggess. The company became a part of the First Texas Volunteers (Cavalry). Only nine days later, on April 15, Captain P. Hardeman's company was enrolled. This company was mustered into service in front of the Alamo in San Antonio on May 23 as a part of the First Regiment of the Texas Mounted Volunteers, commanded by Colonel John S. Ford. Another company was organized at Henderson by Captain R. H. Cumby on May 7, and in July, 1861, Captain J. M. Barton raised a company at Belleview. On September 1, at New Salem, Captain James F. Wiggins organized a company known as the "New Salem Invincibles." In November, Captain J. D. Hamilton organized a company which became Company B, 14th Texas Cavalry of Hood's Texas Brigade. When this company departed from Henderson, Lucy Kilgore presented the group a banner with "Rusk Avengers" embroidered in gold letters.²⁵ This made five companies, each totaling as many as a hundred men, organized during the first year of the Civil War.

On July 28, 1862, Captain Harvey A. Wallace organized a company in Rusk County, and the following summer Captain M. D. Leverett raised still another. There is evidence in the military correspondence and documents of the Texas State Archives, although no muster rolls are available, that the following persons also raised companies in Rusk County; H. D. E. Redwine, C. J. Garrison, O. N. Hollingsworth, and James H. Jones. The **East Texas Times**

²¹ Clement Anselm Evans (ed.), *Confederate Military History*, XI, 114.

²² *Population of The United States in 1860*, p. 503, 504.

²³ *Dallas Morning News*, August 30, 19(—), clipping in Mrs. J. E. Watkins' scrapbook on Rusk County.

²⁴ See Appendix for rosters of those companies which have muster rolls in the Texas State Archives.

²⁵ *Henderson Times*, September 30, 1938.

at Henderson made the following comment on July 18, 1862, concerning the company raised by Captain Jones:

The Compy enrolled by J. H. Jones Esq. for Judge Robert's Regt. was organized on last Saturday. The following is a list of officers elected viz:

Jas. H. Jones, Captain
Thos. Smith, 1st Lieut.
Jas. H. Helms, 2nd.
Jacob Tipps, 2nd Brevt.
Jas. H. Welch, Orderly Sergnt.

The company was sworn into the Confederate service by Judge Roberts on last Wednesday. On Monday week next they will leave for their destination on the coast.

The gentlemen engaged in getting up this company deserve well of their country for the energy and perseverance they have used in this matter.²⁶

Information that has been gathered concerning the various military companies and data from biographies of Rusk County soldiers indicate that the principal engagements in which Rusk County men participated primarily included the battles of Murfreesboro (December 31, 1862-January 2, 1863) and Chickamauga (September 19-20, 1863) in Tennessee, and several campaigns with the Army of Northern Virginia.²⁷ During the last stages of the war many Rusk County men participated in the battles of Atlanta, Georgia; Mobile, Alabama; and Mansfield, Louisiana.

One company of soldiers of Rusk County men was stationed on the Texas coast for a time. It was composed of young boys with no training or experience in fighting and it was given guard duty there. One day a Federal gunboat appeared off the coast and the green commander of this company lined up his troops on the beach in full view of the gunboat and ordered them to fire on the vessel. The vessel returned the fire with its heavy guns when suddenly the officer on the beach gave this amazing order, "Boys, run for your lives. I don't want your mummies blaming me for getting you killed." The boys ran, and the gunboat proceeded on its way.²⁸

²⁶ East Texas Times (Henderson), July 18, 1862.

²⁷ C. A. Evans (ed.), Confederate Military History, II, 132, 133, 141, 163, 165, 170, 182, 190, 192; Sid S. Johnson, Texans Who Wore the Gray, 46, 55, 73, 133.

²⁸ Manuscript in Rusk County files of Miss Myrtis Dean Watkins, Henderson, Texas.

Actual fighting during the war came closest to Rusk County in the spring of 1864 when Major General Nathaniel P. Banks conducted his last attempt to invade Texas with the undertaking of his Red River campaign.²⁹ The United States wanted to invade Texas at the time to counter the activities of the French in Mexico and to extend Federal military operations over all northern Louisiana, southern Arkansas, and eastern Texas.³⁰ Also, the Confederate arsenals at Jefferson, Texas, the shops at Marshall and Henderson, and the rich East Texas farm country constituted choice prizes for the enemy.³¹

On April 8, General Richard Taylor's Confederate forces attacked Bank's army at Mansfield, Louisiana, approximately fifty miles south of Shreveport. Banks retreated and then concentrated his forces at Pleasant Hill, approximately thirty-three miles west of Natchitoches, where another battle was fought. Losses were heavy on both sides and there was another retreat by Banks. Pleasant Hill brought to a close the Red River campaign and ended the Federal attempts to invade Texas.³²

Situated near the Louisiana boundary, persons in Rusk County had a real concern for what was going on at Mansfield and Pleasant Hill. The following quotations picture some events in Rusk County at the time:

Dr. J. E. Watkins had a brother in the Battle of Mansfield, J. A. Watkins, also a brother-in-law, William Whatley, was engaged in that unpleasantness. The brother-in-law used a shotgun in the fray and brought it safely home from the war. The doctor says that he used it many times in hunting when he was growing to manhood. The doctor tells another incident of the battle where a father, William Griffin, left his fourteen year old son Elick as a substitute in Gen. Dick Taylor's Army while he paid a visit to his folks in Rusk County some sixty miles away. The battle came to most folks as a surprise, but greatly to the delight of the young substitute and he took such an active part in the proceedings as to win the admiration of all observers, and his father found his substitute

²⁹ For detailed account of the Red River Campaign see *War of the Rebellion*, Series I, Volume XXXIV, Part I, pp. 162-638.

³⁰ Robert Underwood Johnson and Clarence Clough Buel (eds.), *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, IV, Part 1, pp. 345-362.

³¹ C. A. Evans (ed.), *Confederate Military History*, X, 132; XI, 132-135.

³² Johnson and Buel, *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*, IV, Part 1, pp. 361, 362.

a general favorite in camp—and a hero.

The Mansfield battlefield is about sixty miles due east of the Watkins home—12 miles east of Henderson. The roar of the cannonading was heard by many dwellers in Eastern Rusk County. At the Watkins home, the Rev. A. H. Watkins and his neighbors who had sons, brothers, and other kin in Gen. Taylor's army saddled horses at once and rode to the battlefield and got first-hand news of the greatest Confederate victory that was fought west of the Mississippi River. Also they found much grief to spoil the good news, for many found their sons and brothers dead on the field or wounded and in the hospitals.

Col. James H. Jones of Henderson, commanding the 11th Texas Infantry regiment was desperately wounded at the battlefield, but recovered, went back into the army and was commanding the Third Brigade in Walker's Division of the Trans-Mississippi Dept. at the close of the war.³³

Robert Bruce Richardson, Henderson resident, kept a diary (now in possession of Miss Bess Richardson of Henderson) and recorded the following concerning the battle of Mansfield:

April 8, 1864. National Fast Day and the Battle of Mansfield fought in which the Yankees were defeated with great loss on their side in men & munitions of war. We lost Gen (Alfred) Mouton & many other officers.

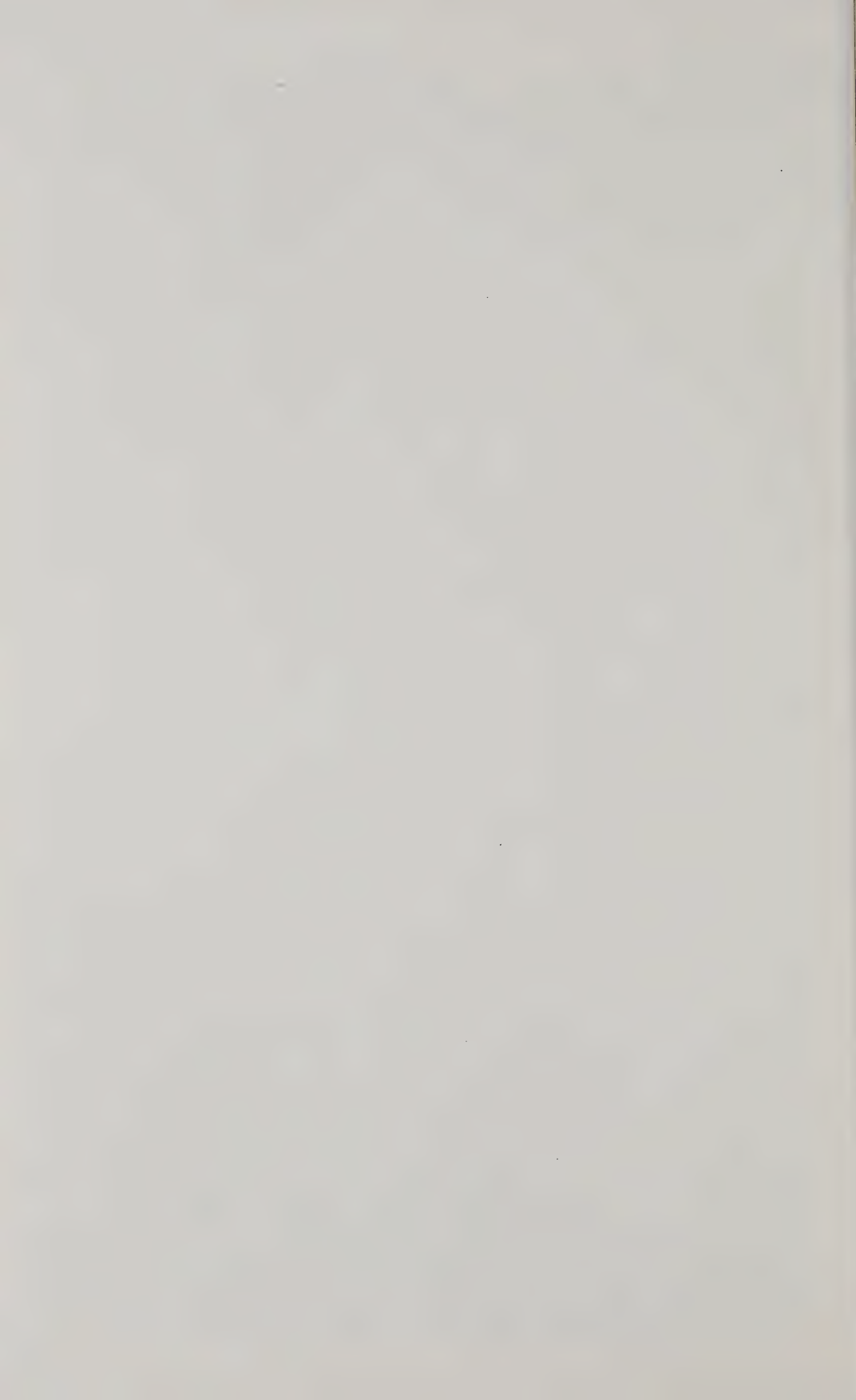
April 14, 1864. News still good from the Battlefield our Pickets at Nackitosh (sic) & the Feds Retreating Rapidly

In September, 1864, two men from Captain Milton M. Boggess' company came back to Rusk County to collect clothing for the men. The company had been the first to leave from Rusk County, having been organized on April 6, 1861. On September 10, 1864, the following appeared in the Henderson **Times**:

J. H. Parsons and Wm. Christie of Capt. Boggess's company, are on detail to collect clothing for the members of the company. The clothing must be delivered at the County Clerk's office, well put up and plainly marked on or before the 25th of October. About ten of the company have no relatives to provide for them and must depend on the liberality of the people.³⁴

³³ Henderson Times, October 14, 1948.

³⁴ Ibid., September 10, 1864.



Life on the home front in Henderson during the war years has been pictured by John S. Crow:

During the war we had to make our own clothes. After my father went to the war we kids farmed in the daytime and at night before going to bed we would card and spin. Everybody was doing this. There were many shortages at the time. Only a few old men remained in the county.³⁵

The year of 1863 was a critical one for the Confederacy and conditions in Rusk County were no exception. During the year the commissioners' court voted to aid the war effort by delivering the iron cage of the county jail to the Confederate government at 65c a pound.³⁶ J. M. Dodson, editor of the Henderson **Times**, on April 28 urged persons not to use grain for whisky. He pleaded:

In the name of patriotism, in the name of the families of the poor soldiers . . . we entreat the people to put a stop to the manufacture and sale of whisky (save for medical purposes), until our country passes through the dreadful ordeal she is now exposed to.

On November 21, the Henderson **Times** carried the following item on the front page:

NOTICE!

Headquarters, Rusk Co., Texas

November 9th, 1863.

To the Slave-Holders of Rusk County:—

The Government of the Confederate Stat(es) now requires of you one third of the able-bodied negro men between the ages of 18 and 50, to be employed immediately, and having been appointed principal agent of this County, I hope the patriotic Slave holders will comply cheerfully and faithfully with their country's demands.

The negroes will be placed in camps, near the centre of the county, until further orders from the Headquarters of this Bureau.

You will be notified by the county agents or sub county agents, what time to report your negroes and obtain receipts for them.

W. L. McMURRAY, County Agent.

As Christmas of 1863 approached, Lewis Mayer, a Henderson merchant, placed the following advertisement in a Henderson newspaper:

³⁵ John S. Crow to D. W., February 22, 1951, University of Texas Archives.

³⁶ Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagged.

I propose to give ten pounds of sugar to each Confederate soldier's family living in the Henderson Beat who are dependent on their labor for support as a Christmas present.³⁷

Robert T. Milner, a youth in Rusk County during the war, later gave the following account of conditions in the East Texas area in general:

My first recollection of this country was during the Civil War. Deep and lasting were the impressions then formed of the stirring events, and shifting scenes, the occupations of the people, the dependence of a country cut off from every avenue of commerce, and the heavy responsibilities laid upon the old men, women, and children, and the proper use and management of the negroes. The country was new, the farms were still "new grounds" and fertile, and the virgin soil was not yet deprived of its original plant food. Just how to make food, clothing, shoes, hats, plows, wagons, and all the articles necessary to support all the people was the grim problem that confronted society.

But the problem was solved. For meat the forests abounded in cattle and hogs. Sheep furnished wool which was carded and woven by hand and made into winter clothing. Hides were tanned and made into shoes. Cotton was easily produced and the cards and spinning wheels were present in every home to convert it into fabrics. Iron rocks were converted into plows; oak, hickory, ash, and other timber supplied every need for which wood is used. Corn, wheat, potatoes and all manner of vegetables were produced in astonishing abundance. Wild bees stored away an endless supply of honey in the hollow trees of the forest, which they divided with every axman in the land. Domestic animals thrived on the range most of the time and multiplied rapidly. To condense into the fewest possible words what could be lengthened into a long and interesting story, there never existed a country that abounded so lavishly in the necessities of life as did this East Texas country during the war.³⁸

When the Confederacy collapsed, Robert Bruce Richardson wrote the following lines in his diary in Henderson:

April 12, 1865. **Oh, God! Lee has surrendered!**
We are lost.

May 29, 1865. **Samuel Returned from the Army.**
It having disbanded & We are a conquered people.

³⁷ Henderson Times, December 19, 1863.

³⁸ R. T. Milner, East Texas, 9-10.

Another school was established in Rusk County during the Civil War. On May 25, 1864, the Henderson Masonic Female Institute was incorporated.³⁹ The school was operated by Clinton Lodge, Number 23, A. F. and A. Masons and the Methodist Church at Henderson, and the institute held its classes in the church. On December 5, 1866, a tornado destroyed the church and Clinton Lodge on the floor above it. The institute probably ceased operations at that time.⁴⁰

Recorded in the diary of Robert Bruce Richardson is the following account of the tornado:

Dec. 5, 1866. Wind & Rain from South. About 10oclock a Tornado passed over Henderson & blew down Taylor Browns, & Mrs. Cumbys, Mrs. Myres houses & the Brick College Burrying the scholars in the rains. 4 boys were killed and many wounded. The Tornado traveled a NE course.

Following the surrender of the Confederate forces at the end of the war, Rusk County went through a period of Reconstruction similar to that of other Texas counties. The Henderson **Times**, on June 24, 1865, reported the following:

Dr. A. M. Yates and the Rev. W. K. Marshall who were requested by the citizens of Henderson and vicinity to visit Shreveport and confer with Gen. Herron as to the course he expected to adopt in the occupation of this country and as to our duty as citizens, have performed their mission and returned home. Gen. Herron received them with marked courtesy, expressing his gratification that the people of this section had sought an opportunity to confer with him upon matters of public interest. He will send no troops to this county unless demanded by the people or rendered necessary to put down lawlessness; he will demand that the cotton, wagons, and mules belonging to the late Confederate Government be turned over to the United States authorities, no effort will be made to collect commissary stores that have been distributed among the people; negroes will be required to remain with their present owners until the crops are gathered, after which they will be permitted to make their own contracts, but will in no event be allowed to

³⁹ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, V, 784.

⁴⁰ Although the Henderson Masonic Female Institute was not incorporated until 1864, the Henderson **Democrat**, June 2, 1855, reported that a school by that name was in operation in 1854, and that in 1855 it had about eighty students.

idle their time (a)way during the military occupation of the county.

During the first years of Reconstruction, under the administrations of Andrew J. Hamilton and James W. Throckmorton, 1865-1867, the county fared well. John S. Crow has given the following account of the early years of Reconstruction:

Rusk County was in pretty good condition after the war. There was an ample supply of corn, bacon, and syrup. There were shortages of coffee and sugar, but on the whole the county was pretty well off. After the slaves were freed, most of them rented from former masters and worked on "halves". The Negroes did mighty well, and as a general thing the Negro was well behaved.⁴¹

In 1867 Representative Mark Stroud wrote the following description of Rusk County for the **Texas Almanac**:

. . . There is a fine male and female school in Henderson, and another of the same character at Mount Enterprise, the former with about 100, the latter not so many pupils. Both schools teach the higher branches. There is also a high-school at London; another at Shellville (Millville?), with about 90 pupils; and still another at Harmony Hill, where the languages and higher branches are also taught. Common-schools are found in all parts of the county. The principal churches are the Missionary, Baptist, Methodist, Cumberland Presbyterian, and Old Presbyterian; also the Christian or Campbellite church. These are in various parts of the county. . . . The agricultural products are cotton, corn, wheat, rye, oats, barley, potatoes, and tobacco. These are raised in large quantities, and for market. The Chinese and African sugar-cane grow well, and most of the farmers make their own syrup. Rice is grown only by a few of the farmers. . . . The present crop of cotton is above an average; the usual yield is about 1000 pounds to the acre. The corn crop is about an average, yielding from 15 to 20 bushels to the acre. . . . The lands vary in price, according to the quality from \$1 to \$10 per acre. The price is not quite as high as before the war, but it is advancing. One hand can cultivate from 25 to 35 acres in corn and cotton; but when crops of wheat, etc., are raised, 25 acres in corn and cotton is as much as a hand can cultivate; besides the negroes

⁴¹ John S. Crow to D. W., February 22, 1951, University of Texas Archives.

are doing far better than anybody expected when they were first set free. We have, however, not been troubled with the Freedmen's Bureau or with soldiers. Their numbers are slowly on the decrease as they have nobody to take care of them.

. . . The stage from Marshall to Huntsville passes through Henderson three times a week. The county is now as well supplied with mails as before the war. . . . There are 5 or 6 merchant flour-mills in Rusk, the flour being superior to any we have from the Western States, and worth usually \$4 to \$6 per 100 lbs. A company has recently organized to manufacture wool and cotton, and the machinery is already sent for. . . . ⁴²

In 1867 the United States Congress put into operation its own plan of Reconstruction which included measures such as re-establishment of military rule in the South and taking away the suffrage right from southern whites who had participated in the Confederacy. As a result of the congressional plan of Reconstruction, Rusk County like other Texas counties suffered much during the administration of Elisha M. Pease, August 8, 1867 - September 30, 1869, and more particularly during the administration of Edmund J. Davis, January 8, 1870 - January 15, 1874.

In the Rusk County elections of 1866 twenty-nine of forty-one persons elected to county offices were removed for "failure to qualify for office." ⁴³ The next year forty-three persons were appointed to county positions by Major General J. J. Reynolds, and of this number twenty-four failed to qualify for failure to take the test oath.⁴⁴

According to John S. Crow the following conditions prevailed in Rusk County during the congressional period of Reconstruction:

As far as disorder went I recall only one incident. Near Minden some Yankees were killed and then Yankee troops moved in. Negroes were put on the jury, and all offices were held by Republicans. Negro troops were sent from Marshall for all elections, and to vote one had to walk between two lines of Negro soldiers with fixed bayonets. The Negroes

⁴² *Texas Almanac for 1867*, pp. 151-152.

⁴³ *Election Returns, 1866-1870*, M. S., 574, 575, Texas State Archives, Austin, Texas.

⁴⁴ *Ibid.*, 576, 577. The "test oath" or "iron-clad oath" was required of all officials of the United States according to Act of Congress, July 2, 1862. Most persons who had taken part in the war on the Confederate side were denied the right to vote. Charles William Ramsdell, *Reconstruction in Texas*, 116, 117.

did not know what was going on. I saw all this take place.⁴⁵

Another account of conditions, from a political aspect, has been given by Dr. J. E. Watkins:

During the campaign in the election of 1870 the nominees for Congress in this district were W. S. Herndon of Tyler, Texas, and George W. Whitmore. Herndon was the Democratic nominee and Whitmore the Republican nominee and they met in a joint debate in a grove on South Street (Henderson) that almost precipitated on a race riot. Whitmore had spoken first. When Herndon had spoken but a short time Whitmore began interrupting him. After two or three interruptions Herndon turning to Whitmore said "if you interrupt again George I am going to slap you off this stage." There were many Negroes present who began drawing arms—even running to their wagons for shot guns. These Negroes were under the direction of Major Flanagan, the father of Webster Flanagan. He, with Nathan Bagley, a local attorney, were seated on the stage near each other when Bagley who was whistling (a custom of his) stepped to Flanagan and said "when the first gun fires I am going to cut your throat. You are in command of these Negroes and if you don't stop them you will be the first man to die." This threat caused Flanagan to rise and tell his Negroes to put down their arms and keep quiet regardless of what was said by Herndon. This positive statement made by Bagley to Major Flanagan at the right time certainly prevented a race riot.

Herndon made a great speech uninterrupted and was elected to Congress.⁴⁶

Two persons from Rusk County who played major roles in state and national politics during Reconstruction were James Winwright Flanagan and his son, Webster. A main reason Rusk County did not suffer more than it did during Reconstruction was because of the power and influence of James Winwright and Webster Flanagan.

The Flanagans had been opposed to secession although both were loyal to the South. When war broke out the father had established a tanyard at Henderson and furnished under contract large quantities of leather to the

⁴⁵ John S. Crow to D. W., February 22, 1951, University of Texas Archives.

⁴⁶ Manuscript in Rusk County files of Miss Myrtis Dean Watkins, Henderson, Texas.

Confederate government.⁴⁷ Webster Flanagan had served in the Confederate Army until discharged because of tuberculosis.

During Reconstruction the Flanagans allied themselves with the moderate wing of the Republican Party. In 1866 James Winwright Flanagan and J. H. Parsons, a prominent lawyer at the time, were elected from the county to the Constitutional Convention.⁴⁸

After the acts of this convention were not recognized by the United States, another convention was called. To the Constitutional Convention of 1868 Rusk County sent both James Winwright Flanagan and Webster Flanagan.⁴⁹ Webster ran twenty-five votes ahead of his father in the election. It is one of the rare occasions in political life that a family should have both the father and son participating in the same body where a constitution for the commonwealth was being made. At the election following the ratification of this constitution, James Winwright Flanagan was chosen lieutenant governor, and Webster Flanagan was elected to the Senate.⁵⁰ In 1869 the Texas Legislature sent James Winwright Flanagan to the United States Senate.⁵¹

Again in 1874 Rusk County sent Webster Flanagan back to the State Senate; and in 1875, when the election for another constitutional convention was called, he was chosen as a delegate to that body.⁵² With the adoption of the constitution of 1875, and the previous one in 1868, Webster Flanagan had participated in the drafting of two constitutions for Texas.

A comparison of the census for 1860 and 1870 gives a good picture of the effects of the Civil War and Reconstruction upon Rusk County. The following figures reveal much:

Year	White	Negro	Total
1850	6,012	2,136	8,148
1860	9,670	6,132	15,803
1870	9,201	7,715	16,849 ⁵³

⁴⁷ Johnson, *Texas and Texans*, IV, 2003.

⁴⁸ *Ibid.*; *Members of the Legislature*, 59.

⁴⁹ Johnson, *Texas and Texans*, IV, 2004; William S. Spear, *Encyclopedia of the New West*, I, 406.

⁵⁰ Ramsdell, *Reconstruction in Texas*, 204, 285.

⁵¹ *Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927*, p. 72.

⁵² *Members of the Legislature*, 79; Speer, *New West*, I, 406.

⁵³ *Statistics of the Population of the United States, Ninth Census*, I, 65, 373.

The census for 1870 in Rusk County showed a marked decline in wealth compared with that of 1860. The value of both real and personal estate was far below that reported in 1860. Twenty-one persons reported personal estates totaling more than \$30,999 in 1860; but in 1870 only two estates were reported totaling \$30,000 or more. Only ten persons reported either real or personal estates totaling \$15,000 or more in the 1870 census. Most plantation owners had been wiped out.

Name	Age	Occupation	Value of Estate	
			Real Estate	Personal Estate
Berry, Henry	62	farmer	\$15,500	\$ 840
Moss, William S.	55	dry goods dealer	6,000	20,000
Stroud, Alfred D.	31	dry goods dealer	4,000	15,000
Wynne, Richard M.	26	law student	15,000	1,000
Kelly, Fannie E. (F)	13	goes to school	15,000	150
Trammel, Francis (F)	40	keeping house	7,500	25,000
Johnson, Benjamin	46	farmer	26,000	9,500
Attoway, A. L.	46	physician	16,000	23,000
March, S. W.	46	physician	100,000	30,000
Chancellor, James J.	47	retail dealer	91,500	40,000 ⁵⁴

Evidently there had been a decrease in settlements in Rusk County by 1870, because during that year there were only fourteen post offices reported. Twenty-one localities with post offices had been reported by the United States Post Office Department in 1857.⁵⁵ On December 1, 1870, post offices were located in the following settlements:

Alma
 Belleview
 Caledonia
 Henderson
 Iron Mountain
 London
 Millville
 Mount Enterprise
 New Danville
 New Salem
 Pine Hill
 Walling's Ferry
 Steele's Grove ⁵⁶

During the 1870's Rusk County began a period of slow recovery from the retardation of the Civil War and Reconstruction. On April 5, 1871, the Henderson Male and

⁵⁴ Ninth United States Census (1870), Population Schedules (Microfilm), Archives Collection, University of Texas Library, Austin.

⁵⁵ See page 30.

⁵⁶ Records of the Post Office Department, M. S., Records of Appointment of Postmasters, The National Archives, Washington, D. C.; Texas Almanac for 1871, p. 252.

Female College was incorporated at Henderson.⁵⁷ Oscar Henry Cooper, later state superintendent of public instruction and president of Baylor University, was president of the college from 1873 to 1879. In 1873 enrollment totaled 160 students, and the first class was graduated in June, 1876. A faculty of ten persons in 1876 included Professor J. C. Mizner, a student of Franz Liszt and graduate of the Leipzig Conservatory of Music.⁵⁸ R. T. Milner, later president of the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas, graduated from the school. In 1878 a writer stated:

Among its (Henderson's) educational advantages is Henderson College, a flourishing school, which has achieved a high character as one of the best schools in the Southwest.⁵⁹

Another school, Alexander Institute, was established at Kilgore in 1873 by Isaac Alexander as a private enterprise. In 1875 the school was transferred to the East Texas Conference of the Methodist Episcopal Church, South.⁶⁰ Opened with primary, grammar, and junior college departments, the school developed into a finishing school for girls and a preparatory school for boys. The only Methodist school in the bounds of the conference, the Institute, by 1885, had property valued at \$8,000, employed four teachers, and enrolled 150 pupils.⁶¹

The first railroad, the International and Great Northern, crossed the northwest corner of the county in 1872, and Overton became the principal shipping point. Two years later on April 29, 1874, the Henderson and Overton Branch Railroad Company was chartered to build sixteen miles from Overton to Henderson. The act, authorizing construction, reads as follows:

An act to authorize the corporation of the town of Henderson, in Rusk County, to aid in the construction of the "Henderson and Overton Railroad."

Section 1. Be it enacted by the Legislature of the State of Texas, That the mayor and board of aldermen of the town of Henderson, at their discretion, be and they are hereby authorized and empowered to issue bonds of said corporation to the

⁵⁷ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, VI, 1228.

⁵⁸ *Henderson Times*, October 21, 1937.

⁵⁹ James L. Rock and W. I. Smith, *Southern and Western Texas Guide for 1878*, p. 116.

⁶⁰ H. S. Thrall, *A Brief History of Methodism in Texas*, 276.

⁶¹ *Ibid.*; Mrs. Hattie (Joplin) Roach, *A History of Cherokee County, Texas*, 154. The school was transferred to Jacksonville and later became Lon Morris College.

amount of ten thousand dollars, or so much thereof as they may deem necessary, to the aid of the Henderson and Overton Railroad Company, in constructing and securing the right of way for a railroad from Overton to the town of Henderson, in Rusk County; and to levy and collect an ad valorem tax of not more than one-fourth of one per cent. in any one year, on all the taxable property within the corporate limits of said town, and a poll tax of not more than one dollar per capita on all the qualified voters in said town to pay off said bonds.

Sec. 2. The mayor and board of aldermen of said town are hereby authorized to pass any ordinance, and adopt any regulations not inconsistent with the Constitution of the United States and of this State, to carry this act into effect. Said bonds shall be signed by the mayor and counter-signed by the treasurer of said town, and be made payable at such times and in such manner as the said town officers may designate.

Sec. 3. That this act shall take effect and be in force from and after its passage.

(Note—The foregoing bill was presented to the Governor of Texas for his approval on the twenty-sixth day of February, A.D. 1875, and was neither signed by him nor returned to the house in which it originated, with his objections thereto, within the time prescribed by the constitution, and thereupon became a law without his signature. "Signed," A. W. DeBerry, Secretary of State.⁶²

General Webster Flanagan became president of the company. Part of the road was built with convict labor and the city of Henderson put up \$90,000 in bonds.⁶³ The Henderson and Overton Railroad was completed on May 31, 1877, at a cost of \$116,811.⁶⁴ The next day the first train arrived in Henderson, and the following event took place:

The sun shone bright on that June morning in 1877, when almost the total population of Henderson and hundreds of folk from over the county gathered to see the first railroad train arrive. The sun shone warmly too, and hundreds of ladies raised their umbrellas and parasols to shield their complexions—as sun-tan was the opposite of fashionable a couple

⁶² Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, VIII, 635.

⁶³ S. G. Reed, *A History of the Texas Railroads*, 322.

⁶⁴ *Henderson Times*, January 13, 1938.

of generations ago. As the expectant crowd was tensely awaiting the event and everyone could hear the engine puffing and the car wheels rumbling into the railway yards, the town wag, Sam Ramey, raised both his arms high in the air to attract the attention of all the folks and cried in a loud voice:

"Ladies! Lower your umbrellas; or you will scare the engine!"

Hundreds of umbrellas seemed automatically to fade from view and a shout went up, the ladies joined in the merriment; and the locomotive glided into the station and came to a stop.⁶⁵

The Henderson and Overton Railroad had quite a reputation, and there was much legend and local color connected with the train. Excerpts from an article by Tabitha Milner in the Dallas **Morning News** give a good picture of the type train which ran from Henderson to Overton.

THE EASIEST-GOING IRON HORSE OF THIS CENTURY PLIES DAILY BETWEEN HENDERSON AND OVERTON—IT BACKS ONE WAY AND GOES COW-CATCHER FIRST THE OTHER—ON ONE TRIP YOU CAN FORAGE IN EVERY ORCHARD ALONG THE TRACK AND VISIT ALL THE NEIGHBORS WHILE THE TRAIN CREW SHOOS A STRAY COW HOME OR DELIVERS THE MORNING PAPERS.

. . . I am interested . . . in the marvelous humanness of a railroad—a railroad that is almost unique, but I hope will never become extinct. I am interested in the train that makes seven or eight regular stops in fifteen miles and will stop anywhere else you flag it. And its reasons for stopping are as unique as the road. The train crew know where the best butter, the freshest eggs, the finest home-canned vegetables and fruit or fresh vegetables and fruit in season are to be found, but being human, they don't all agree on the same places. . . .

. . . (The) coach plays many parts. One end is for baggage and express; the next section for white passengers, the conductor, brakeman, express messenger, et al., and the third section is for negroes and technically the smoking car; however, smoking is indulged in wherever the smoker happens to be. On Sundays, except in rare instances, there is no freight out of Henderson, and the spectacle of the small engine backing out of town and pulling the one dinky little coach is a sight that competes with

⁶⁵ Ibid.

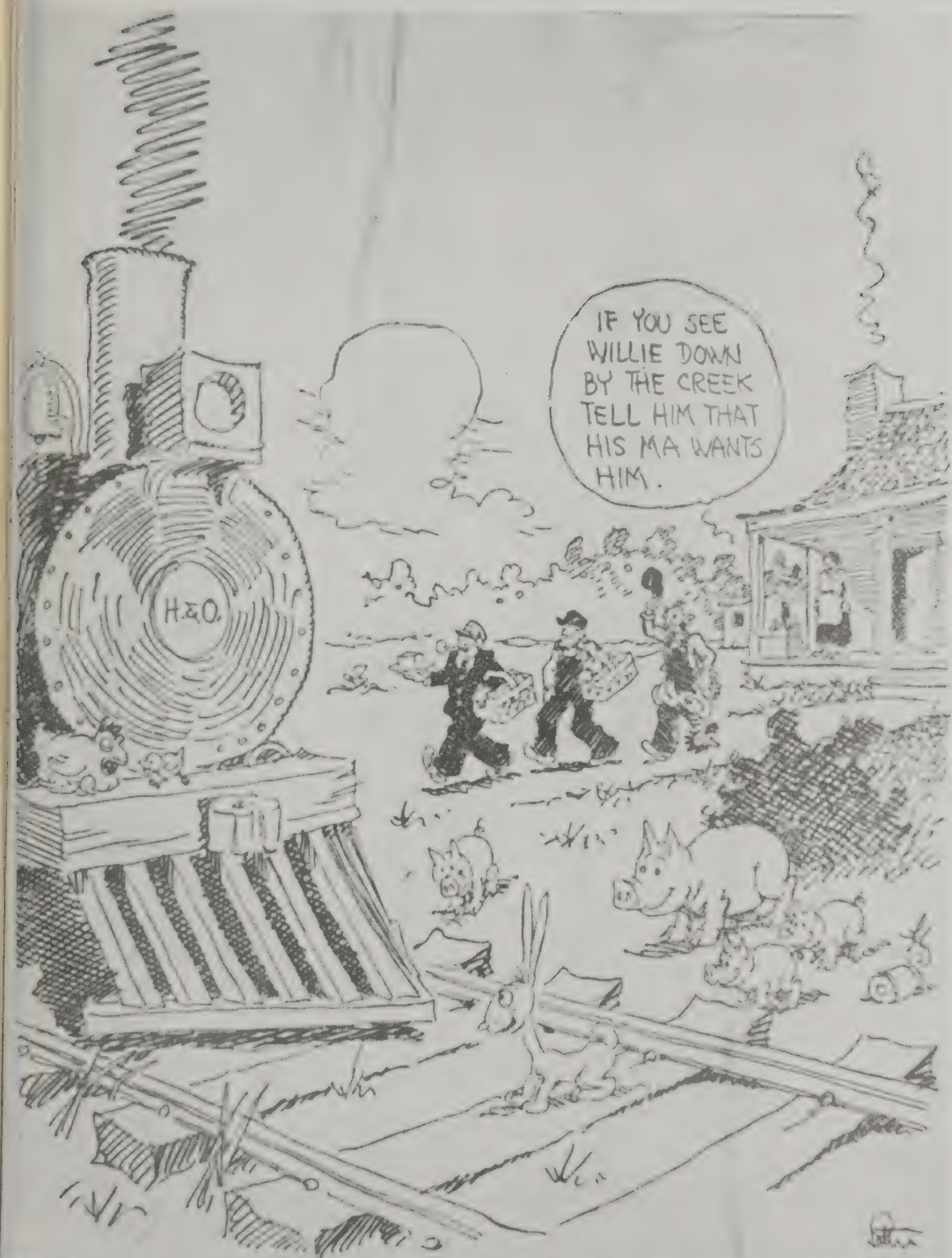
the Toonerville Trolley and should cheer the gloomiest individual.

There was formerly a turntable at Henderson and another at Overton, but first one and then the other fell into disuse, and as the locomotive the last time it was turned was facing Overton it backed into Henderson and ran into Overton cow-catcher first, but the traveling public made so much fun of Henderson because its train backed into town that . . . the engine (was) sent down to Palestine or some other place where there was a turntable and turned around, and now runs—if runs isn't too superlative a term to apply to its progress—into Henderson head first and backs haughtily into Overton, and Overton doesn't care how, or even if the H. & O. enters (being occupied with Sunshine Specials, numerous locals and mile-long freights), so everybody is happy and the proud are satisfied.

. . . All of us who live along the railroad remember the genial fireman who for years was our favorite hero and was generally considered to be a blend of Santa Claus and the fairies. He distributed gifts of candy, fruit, and toys impartially to the eager smiling white children and the grinning pickaninies along side the track, and—here's where the fairies came in—he always knew when a child was sick with a bad cold or a sore foot or any more serious affliction, and tossed off something special for the invalid with a special message attached, and it was duly delivered by brother or playmate.

Tip-Top is all its name implies, a long, steep grade leading up to it, but more than twice have I known the H. & O. to stop at the foot of the hill in order that a sick person on a stretcher might be taken off a few hundred yards nearer his or her home than if the train had gone on to the regular stop. There are two old ladies, both portly, to phrase it politely, who visit our community. The H. & O. always stops for them half-way up this long grade, because there is a crossing built up there and it is easier for them to descend there than to make the steep descent from the high steps at Tip-Top. Of course, they lose time, and consume a lot of extra fuel, and sometimes have to back down for a fresh start, but the next time either of these old ladies is on the train the conductor volunteers to let her off right there.

Ten years ago a boy in our neighborhood had a bird dog that was the apple of his eye, and when



THE CREW KNOWS WHERE THE BEST BUTTER AND EGGS ARE TO BE FOUND.



THE BRAKEMAN WHISTLED TO THE DOG!

he went away to war he urged everybody to "take care of Fred." Fred, however, managed to get lost or stolen and was AWOL for about a week when a brakeman on the H. & O. recognized him near Overton one morning. He halted the train, whistled to the dog and put the footsore animal in the baggage coach. In front of Fred's home an hour or so later the train stopped again, and the brakeman stuck his head out and yelled: "Hey, Mr. C—, here's old Fred!" and all the children in the neighborhood exulted over Fred's return and his free ride on the train. . . .

Once I met a man who said he had been in Henderson one time, that he rode on the H. & O. And wasn't it a delightful experience? I asked.

"I'll say it was," he replied, but in tones that carried no conviction. "I was to make a speech at 1:30 in the afternoon and leave on the 2:15 train. I cut my speech down to twenty minutes, and made a dash for the station and spent three hours waiting for a car of turkeys to be loaded. I never saw as many turkeys in my life. I missed the train out of Overton and had to spend the night there. Oh, yes, it was a delightful experience, but I don't want any more speeches in Henderson the week before Thanksgiving."

In the early 1870's a movement began in northern Rusk County for separation, and on April 30, 1874, Gregg County was created.⁶⁶ Approximately 284 square miles of territory and a considerable part of the population, including the old settlement of Danville, went to Gregg County.

Rusk County suffered another loss when in March, 1878, the courthouse located in the center of the public square was burned for a second time.⁶⁷ Another courthouse was built in the same location and remained until torn down in 1929.

In the late 1870's Rusk County began to come out of the period of Reconstruction. With the coming of the railroads and some increase in population, progress was being made. One of the best detailed descriptions of Rusk

⁶⁶ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, VIII, 181. See Appendix III with map showing territory lost.

⁶⁷ Henderson Daily News, May 5, 1940. An entry in the Robert Bruce Richardson Diary reads: "March 6, 1878, Last night the court house burned down." The fires destroying the courthouses in 1860 and 1873 also destroyed many county records. This has made it difficult to work with original source materials.

County has been found in the **Texas New Yorker**.⁶⁸ Excerpts from the issue of Vol. VIII, No. 3, November, 1877, follow:

EDITORIAL CORRESPONDENCE FROM GALVESTON, TEXAS

* * * *

Full Description of Rusk County—Henderson the County Seat—Live Men in a Live Little City—Growth, Prosperity and Fine Hopes for the Future—Good Schools, Churches and Refined Christian People.

* * * *

Governor Flanagan's Model Stock Farm—The Best Jersey Cattle in the South—Blooded Horses, Hogs, Pigs and Poultry.

* * * *

THE BUSINESS MEN OF HENDERSON

Let Immigrants Visit and Look at Henderson and the Adjacent Country.

* * * *

GALVESTON, TEXAS, October 19th, 1877. Let us tell the reader what we know about

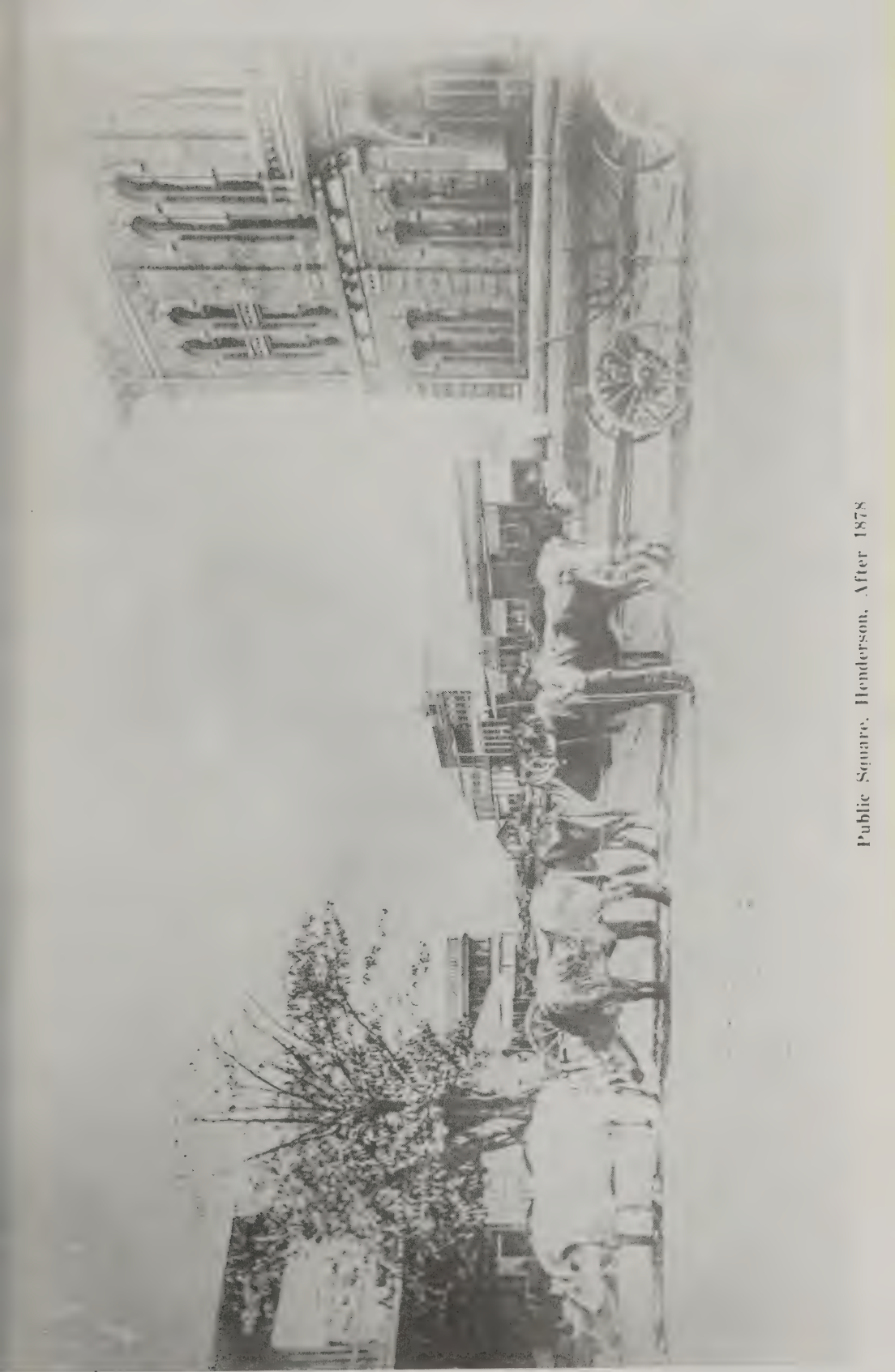
RUSK COUNTY

This is among the largest of Texas counties and contains no less than 1,025 square miles. It is situated east of Smith County, and south of the counties of Gregg and Harrison, from which it is separated by the Sabine River, which forms its northern boundary. The water privileges are abundant. It has numerous creeks, tributaries of the Sabine River, and of the Angelina River, which passes on the south-west corner of the county, and, farther on, mingles its waters with those of the Neches; also many springs, taking their rise, or springing up at the base of some of the many hills with which the landscape is varied—all supplying pure free-stone water. Some mineral springs also exist, famous for their health-giving properties.

THE SOIL

is mostly a sandy loam, resting on a clay subsoil, and consists of the grey, black and reddish varieties, and produces far better than one would suppose on superficial examination. Many of the farms

⁶⁸ The *Texas New Yorker* was a monthly periodical issued in New York City by George H. Sweet during the 1870's. It was "devoted to making known to the capitalist, merchant, mechanic, and emigrant the agricultural, horticultural, stock-raising and other latent wealth of Texas." It contained considerable advertising and was designed to appeal to emigrant and Texas consumption.



Public Square, Henderson, After 1878

have been cultivated twenty or thirty years without having been enriched by artificial means; yet the land does not seem in the least exhausted. But farming without fertilizing the soil is not the best way. By occasionally overflowing the pasture lands, and the oat and buckwheat fields, while green, they would so increase the yields, as to surprise even the most sanguine lovers of the country. But all the soil is not sandy. Along the numerous streams are magnificent bottom lands of rich alluvial mould, covered with noble trees.

THE TIMBER

embraces most of the varieties of oak known to Texas, hickory, walnut, pine, cypress, sweet gum, elm, etc.

THE SURFACE

of the country is undulating and picturesque, and being situated as it is, some 600 or 700 feet above the Gulf of Mexico, it is consequently well drained.

THE NATIVE PRODUCTIONS

are iron, which is of a superior quality and very abundant; excellent rock for building purposes; clay and sand suitable for brick; and a superior quality of the kind of clay used in manufacturing stoneware, table china, etc. An extensive deposit of potter's clay is found near Henderson. This mine of earthenware clay has not been fully explored, but its treasures seem inexhaustable.

THE VEGETABLE PRODUCTIONS

are cotton, corn, broom corn, Chinese sugar cane, wheat, oats, barley, rye, millet, Irish and sweet potatoes, carrots, turnips, beets, peas, beans, squashes, melons, tomatoes, cabbages, onions, etc. Tobacco is also abundantly raised. Such as have paid attention to fruit raising, have an ample supply of grapes, pears, plums, peaches, quinces, cherries, currants, blackberries, strawberries, apples, raspberries, and the like.

INDUSTRIOUS FARMERS

have an abundance of the above named articles, besides plenty of fine fat horses, mules, hogs; cattle and all kinds of fowls.

PRICE OF LAND

Improved farms sell at from \$5 to \$15 per acre; unimproved at from \$1.50 to \$2.50 per acre, according to their proximity to market, the character of the lands and the amount of timber thereon. Some good lands can be had in large quantities at fifty

cents per acre. There is no portion of the county that has not plenty of pure water and an abundance of timber for fuel and for building purposes.

THE POPULATION

of Rusk County, according to the U. S. Census of 1870, was 16,916. It may be safely estimated now at 24,000 or 25,000.

HENDERSON

the county seat, is a thriving little city and the most important place in the county. Its location is centre; its situation, on a rich undulating scope of country, surrounded by noble forest trees; while its houses are embowered among China trees, vines and flowing shrubs, is such as to give it a very picturesque appearance. It has a population of about 2,000 souls—is well supplied with schools, and with churches representing nearly all denominations, as well as with business houses of all kinds.

Henderson is connected with the outside commercial world by the

HENDERSON AND OVERTON BRANCH RAILROAD

a line some fifteen miles long, which intersects that great line, the International and Great Northern Railroad at Overton, a village in the northwestern part of the county. We passed over this branch line in company with James A. Ross, Esq., a gentlemanly conductor, whose residence is at Overton, and who will give all necessary information to persons alighting at the I. & G. N. Railroad depot, who desire to visit Henderson. And here let us remark, *en passant*, that persons looking for homes should not pass through this county without giving it their full attention, and inquiring fully into its resources. It might not catch the eye of the traveler, looking for tillable land, so readily as the unincumbered prairies; but it is full of gold, which a very little digging will disclose to view. Once cleared, it is the easiest of all lands to cultivate, while its healthful surroundings—no flats, swamps, or stagnant water, make it a most desirable location.

Henderson, being the southeastern terminus of the Henderson and Overton Branch Railroad, is now receiving cotton from farmers living in Nacogdoches, Shelby, San Augustine and Panola Counties, as it is their nearest shipping point. This trade, with that of Rusk County, gives Henderson considerable local importance, and is helping to build it up in a very substantial manner. It boasts of some of

the most solid business firms to be found in Eastern Texas, as well as of some of the most enterprising and intelligent farmers. It is improving rapidly. Many fine buildings are in course of construction, and more are in prospective.

About a mile distance from Henderson is a charming and highly productive farm, belonging to an old and valued friend of ours,

GOVERNOR WEBSTER FLANAGAN

It is known as "Locust Grove," and contains three hundred and forty acres of choice land, two hundred acres of which are enclosed by a substantial plank fence. Gov. Flanagan, although a farmer, is no ordinary man. He is one of that class of persons who, if they would turn their attention to agriculture and to stock-raising, could soon make our young State as beautiful and productive as was Eden itself. He is now giving much of his time and attention to the importation into Texas of fine blooded stock of nearly all kinds, and to the breeding of the same, in which important pursuits he is eminently successful. He has a small herd of pure Jersey cattle, imported from Jersey Island, on the coast of England. Some persons know this kind of stock as the Alderney, but the Governor says its true name is Jersey. Two of his cows were shipped from Jersey, en route for Texas, on June 7th, 1873, and arrived at Overton on the 7th of August, having been two months on the voyage. They were in fine health when received, and have remained so. The same month of their arrival, these beautiful animals each gave birth to a heifer calf. These have since grown into valuable cows—in fact, they are among the most valuable to be found in Texas, and equal to any in the United States. Each of the four will, in the best milking season, give from twenty-eight to thirty-two gallons of rich milk per day. (Query—How long would it take such a useful animal to pay for herself in Galveston, where milk is eighty cents per gallon?) The "Texas Beauty," No. 1, born at Henderson, August 19th, 1873, is the mother of three fine animals—two males and one female, and will yield her fourth increase next Spring. Governor Flanagan has also three other Jersey heifers from the celebrated stock farm of Messrs. D. Douglas & Son, of Peveley, Mo. All of these animals are hardy and healthy. They take kindly to our climate, and are remarkable for their docility. The cows are so extremely gentle that no lady need to

fear in the least to milk them. The color of the Jerseys is usually fawn, but sometimes is squirrel, brown, or nearly white. They have a soft yellow skin, and fine glossy hair. The male calves, when two or three months old, sell readily at \$50; the females at \$100.

Col. Thomas W. Pierce, of Boston, gave Gov. Flanagan a fine male Jersey, named the "Jersey Prince." He is now the property of the Supreme Court Clerk, son of Chief Justice O. M. Roberts, of Tyler, and of the Supreme Bench of Texas. He is said to be a princely fellow. Of the male Jerseys now belonging to the Governor, we noticed "Tom Pierce" and "Henry Andrews," both two years old. Like their illustrious namesakes, Col. T. W. Pierce and Col. H. B. Andrews, President and Vice-President, and General Manager of the Galveston, Harrisburg and San Antonio Railroad, they are hard to head off. Another, "Joe Crosby," a yearling, resembles his namesake, Judge Crosby, inasmuch as he bids fair to establish a most worthy record. The whole herd, numbering nine or ten, are superior animals.

Gov. Flanagan informed us that he usually keeps his cows in pasture during summer, feeding them daily, as well, a little wheat bran mixed with water. In winter, he adds to the bran mash, some steamed or boiled cotton seed, and gives them a little hay or straw besides.

Gov. Flanagan has some forty or fifty pure blooded Berkshire hogs, which thrive well, and from which the whole of the surrounding country is being stocked. His price for pigs, three months old, is \$25 per pair. He has also done much in introducing fine horse stock into Texas. He owns some thoroughbred animals, among which is the celebrated stallion, "Jack Gamble," fourteen years old and sixteen hands high—winner of many a race; now kept for stock purposes only. "Queen Annie" is a noble mare, sired by "Highlander," is four years old, and, though never speeded, bids fair to make a good record as a trotter. "Jennie Gamble," sired by "Jack Gamble," her dam "Queen Annie," an imported mare, is also four years old, and well attests her royal blood. The Governor has a number of fine blooded colts. His poultry yard, too, is well stocked with the best breeds, among which are game chicken of all kinds from the game bantam up to the Irish grey. He has likewise given

considerable attention to the Angora goats—a fleece bearing animal, destined to be the pride of the high land country of Texas, and in the production of which Wm. D. Parrish, of Leon Springs, Bexar Co., has had such great success. In fact, the Governor's love of fine stock is everywhere apparent, and he has done as much as any man in the State, if not more, to improve the stock of Texas.

Governor Flanagan is a native of Kentucky, but has been in Texas nearly thirty-four years. We might say that he has been really raised in our midst. He has filled the honorable position of State Senator from his district during various Legislatures, and at one time was appointed Lieut. Governor to fill the vacancy occasioned by the death of Lieut. Governor Dan Campbell, of Jefferson. He is now the President of the Henderson & Overton Branch Railroad, of which we have already spoken. But for his wonderful activity and determination, seconded and assisted by such men as J. D. Moss, W. S. Moss, Judge W. W. Morris, Mr. Carter and a few other sturdy sons of old Rusk County, this important consummation for Henderson and Rusk County would never have been effected. We congratulate these public-spirited gentlemen on the completion of their enterprises. Cheap, quick freights and reliable communication with the outside business public are among their rewards.

Governor Flanagan, among his other duties, has undertaken that of developing and improving Texas fruit, besides showing to the people the best and most expeditious methods of farming. On the various subjects which he is investigating, farmers and stock men should correspond with him.

We joy that there are such men of advanced ideas, who have means which they are willing to use in developing the resources of Texas, showing that the most money can be made by raising the best kinds of stock, and the best varieties of cereals, fruit, vegetables, etc. The best of everything is always the most marketable, the most profitable, and, in the end, the cheapest for the purchaser. Farmers of Texas, remember these simple facts at which we have so briefly hinted, and strive, as far as possible, to emulate your fellow-citizen, Gov. Flanagan, of Henderson, who, we trust, will live long to instill his progressive ideas into the minds of our people. Texas is the garden spot of the

world, as will be proved when her resources are properly developed.

Governor Flanagan in all respects is worthy of his father,

HON. J. W. FLANAGAN,

of Longview, a gentleman of note and enterprise, who, since the war, has served the full term of six years in the United States Senate. He is now at home, jolly and still youthful in appearance, occupied in building, farming, buying and shipping cotton, etc. His vitality and remarkable energy may be shown by the fact that he manages some sixteen farms, besides the other business which he conducts.

Another of the live citizens of Rusk County is

JUDGE W. W. MORRIS,

who has shown commendable determination in developing the fire-brick and stone-ware clay found in the mine which we have already mentioned. After having the material thoroughly tested in London, England, and other places, he has started a factory for the manufacturing of the best fire-brick and stone-ware. The enterprise as yet is only in its infancy, but it will likely grow into a grand industry if judiciously fostered.

Turning now to the mercantile houses of Henderson, we note

MESSRS. ENDEL, BARUCH & CO.,

dealers in dry goods, clothing, hats, caps, boots, shoes, trunks and valises.

This firm began at Henderson in July of the present year, and at the same time opened a store at Waco; but the senior member, J. Endel, has been a resident of Texas much longer than the time specified. Their Henderson house is two stories high, 65 x 24 feet, with a cellar, and the entire building is filled with a stock of everything to their line, which they sell at the lowest prices. They also buy, sell and ship cotton.

One of the largest—if not the very largest—mercantile establishments in Henderson is the "Rail-road Store" of

MESSRS. J. D. & W. S. MOSS,

who began business in Henderson in 1866. W. S. Moss is at present the able Vice-President of the H. & O. B. R. R. Both are old Texans of solid standing. This firm are general dealers in dry goods, clothing, boots, shoes, hats, queensware, hardware, etc. They make a specialty of all kinds of improved farming implements and agricultural machinery,

engines, boilers, and the like. They bring in stoves and furniture by the carload, and can supply every farm, household and business house with any needed article, small or large. They also deal largely in cotton, offering the best terms both to the seller and buyer.

W. H. & G. H. WEAVER

are dealers in dry goods, notions, groceries, boots, shoes, hats, caps, queensware and general merchandise.

They were formerly doing business at Nacogdoches; but owing to the improved railroad facilities of Henderson, concluded to remove to the latter place, which they did quite recently. They carry a large stock and sell their goods very low. The senior member has been a resident of Texas thirty-two years, which in itself vouches for the standing of the house.

STILL AND LACY

are also dealers in dry goods, groceries, boots, shoes, hats, caps, queensware, hardware and notions.

This firm, composed of gentlemen of energy and pluck, was established in 1868. Like the majority of first-class Henderson houses, they carry a large stock and sell low. They also deal in cotton.

E. H. CARTER & CO.,

proprietors of the Henderson Cash Store, and dealers in staple and fancy groceries, liquors, tobacco and segars, have a first-class establishment and carry a heavy stock of goods. Give them a call.

L. & A. ZEVE

are dealers in dry goods, clothing, boots and shoes, staple and fancy groceries, who sell low, and who pay the highest cash prices for cotton, hides, and country produce.

This firm, consisting of two enterprising brothers, was established some two years since, and is doing a live and growing business. They are enthusiastic in their belief in the future greatness of Rusk County, and are doing all they can to attract the attention of worthy people to that locality. Their establishment consists of a store building, 60 x 20 feet, and a warehouse, 60 x 12 feet.

One of the self-made merchants of the place is

ABE MAYER

who settled in Rusk County twenty-five years ago, and who has remained true to her through adversity and prosperity. He began business as a pedlar, gradually working his way up until he now owns

a large mercantile establishment. He is a general dealer in dry goods, groceries, boots, shoes, hats, caps, &c., and makes a specialty of tailor's trimmings. All success, we say, to such men as Abe Mayer, who are willing to work for what they enjoy, whether behind the counter or on the farm.

MR. W. J. CROW

is the liberal-hearted proprietor of an elegant stock of general merchandise, embracing everything to be found in a store where farmers, mechanics, and people of all pursuits and in all positions in life may trade with perfect satisfaction. He buys largely for cash, and sells therefore at the most satisfactory prices. He trades in country produce of all kinds and transacts a general commission business, receiving and forwarding all articles consigned to his care. He has a large warehouse, which furnishes ample room for the storage of cotton and other freight. Mr. Crow has lived in Henderson since 1868, and takes a praiseworthy pride in the growth of his pleasant little city.

Still another live business man of Henderson is

COLONEL THOMPSON CAMP,

an old and reliable citizen, having resided in the place over twenty-five years—or, in fact, ever since the time when it was only a hamlet of log buildings. He is now engaged in conducting a general mercantile business, dealing largely in cotton, wool, hides, and country produce. He makes liberal advances on consignments from farmers and planters.

Last but not least in our list of mercantile men comes

MR. JOHN E. JONES,

who settled in Henderson in 1856, and from a small beginning has built up a heavy business, and is now considered one of the props of the city. He deals in all kinds of staple and fancy goods, which make up a superior stock of general merchandise. Mr. Jones is a gentleman of kindly manners and strict probity of character, noted for his honorable dealings with his brother man. For good articles and prices to suit the times we commend his establishment to the public. We understand that he also does a forwarding and commission business.

Henderson, as before remarked, is well supplied with schools, prominent among which is the male and female college, under the management of

PROF. O. H. COOPER,

assisted by an able corps of teachers, and where

some two hundred pupils are in attendance. The professor is held in very high estimation by his patrons and acquaintances; is considered to be a finished scholar and a man of ripe judgment, fully competent to train and educate the young. If we mistake not, he is a graduate of old Yale.

THE BAR OF HENDERSON

is ably represented by such old legal firms as Field & Oliver, Jones & Wynne, Col. Spivy, Capt. J. H. Turner, &c., &c.

The firm of

MESSRS. FIELD & OLIVER

is composed of Judge Drury Field, who settled in Texas in 1838. His partner is A. W. Oliver, Esq., who has resided in our State for the last 20 years. They are both accomplished Attorneys and practice in all the Federal, Supreme and District Courts.

The law firm of

MESSRS. JONES & WYNNE,

is composed of Judge Drury Field, who settled in Richard Wynne, two as solid men as grace the legal profession in any State in the South.

The senior partner, Colonel Jones, is a native of Alabama—he came to Texas as a young man in 1851, and settled in Rusk Co., where he has since remained and grown prominent as a member of his profession; his name has more than once been brought conspicuously forward as a candidate for Congress, from his, the first district. Colonel Jones is no ordinary man—he has a very pleasing address, is tall, stately and commanding in physique. He is well read up in the practice, and although a very polite and clever gentleman, he is a hard man to head off in a closely contested case. His partner, Captain Wynne, is a somewhat younger man but well up in all the strong points of the profession, and between the two gentlemen it is doubtful if any abler firm, or two more trustworthy attorneys at law can be found in any State. They practice in the District Courts of Eastern Texas and the Supreme Court and Federal Court at Tyler.

CAPT. J. H. TURNER

is also a young and able attorney at law, at Henderson, who gives prompt attention to all business intrusted to his care. He is energetic, stirring and the soul of honor, so his many friends aver. He located in Rusk County about seven years ago and by close attention to his books, office duties and cases, is rapidly climbing the ladder of fame and

fortune. Any claims entrusted to his care for collection will be pressed to rapid adjustment.

COL. W. W. SPIVY

is the County Attorney for Rusk County. He is a brave officer and fearless in the discharge of his duties toward the public. It is, indeed, seldom that we meet with more truly cultured, refined and able members of the legal fraternity than those composing the Henderson Bar.

From the Henderson **Times**, over which Mr. W. M. Crow presides with marked ability as editor, we learn how the Courts of this part of Texas are organized and when justice is administered.

DISTRICT COURT

Judge	A. J. Booty
County Attorney	W. W. Spivy
Clerk	B. C. Dickinson
Sheriff	J. E. Norvell

TERMS OF COURT

First Monday in January and July.

COUNTY COURT

Judge	A. J. Smith
County Attorney	W. W. Spivy
Clerk	J. N. Still

TERMS OF COURT

For criminal business, on first Monday in every month.

For civil business and matters in Probate, on the third Mondays in February, April, June, August, October and November.

COMMISSIONERS' COURT

Judge	A. J. Smith
-------------	-------------

COMMISSIONERS

Precinct No. 1	J. S. Tipps
Precinct No. 2	G. Strong
Precinct No. 3	A. Langston
Precinct No. 4	H. Perkins

Terms in Court, second Mondays in February, May, August and November.

County Treasurer	J. A. Whiteside
Assessor of Taxes	J. S. McDonough
Collector of Taxes	H. R. T. Parker

JUSTICES' COURTS

Precinct No. 1—W. Davis, J. P., at Henderson, on the second Monday in each month.

- Precinct No. 2—J. D. Spinks, J. P., at Overton, on the third Monday in each month.
- Precinct No. 3—F. H. Garrison, J. P., at Harmony Hill on the third Friday in each month.
- Precinct No. 4—Isaac Lawler, J. P., at Concord, on the fourth Friday in each month.
- Precinct No. 5—B. B. Lyles, J. P., at Glen Fawn, on the third Monday in each month.
- Precinct No. 6—P. H. Tally, at New Salem, on the first Friday in each month.
- Precinct No. 7—D. M. Deason, J. P., at Pine Hill, on the fourth Tuesday in each month.

THE DAVENPORT HOUSE

is a commodious brick hotel, which has been recently remodeled, renovated, and is being newly and elegantly furnished throughout. It is kept by that genial host, Mr. Daniel Head, as proprietor, and when completed in all its appointments, will afford first-class accommodations in every respect.

There is a large sample room kept expressly for commercial travelers, and a free hack to and from the R. R. depot. Mr. Head is a very clever and obliging landlord, and seems to take particular delight in making his guests feel at home and be happy.

Our visit to this highly prosperous little city was agreeable in all respects. The citizens are all well-to-do—not making big fortunes, but all making something—and they are quiet, peaceful, contented and happy. They have good institutions of learning, neat church edifices, comfortable homes and prosperous business surroundings. A good banking institution is much needed, and money could be made in banking at Henderson. Both the farmers and merchants are free from debts. To immigrants we say, don't run by Henderson until you have examined into its opportunities. You can write to almost any of the parties whom we have named above for further information, with the certainty of being answered. Good farm labor is always in demand, with wages at about \$15 per month and board included.

For families, living is cheap. Food is abundant and the health of the people good.

But more anon,

G. H. S.

CHAPTER V

THE COUNTY, 1880 UNTIL 1930

On August 16, 1882, at the closing exercises of the Henderson Summer Normal School, Lena Carlton, daughter of Dr. S. M. Carlton, a practicing physician in Henderson in the early eighties, read her essay "Historical Sketch of Henderson." The historical contents of this paper may be accepted as having been obtained from original sources. Many persons mentioned in the paper were among the first to settle in Henderson and the county. Because of its historical importance as probably the first written history of Henderson and since it gives an excellent picture of Henderson and Rusk County at the beginning of the 1880's, the essay is quoted in its entirety.

HISTORICAL SKETCH OF HENDERSON ¹

Away down in the "bright sunny South," among the vine-clad hills of Texas, the empire state of our powerful Confederacy, the United States of America, nestles the charming little city of Henderson.

Tradition says that it is built on the site of an old Shawnee village, around which cluster many romantic legends, and where once the Redmen reveled in carnage over the bleeding scalp, torn from the pale-face to deck their rude wigwams, sung their savage song and engaged in war-dances.

Its climate, modified by pleasant sea breezes from the Gulf of Mexico, and moistened by refreshing showers, is salubrious and delightful.

Henderson was settled in 1844, on a league of land owned by Mr. James Smith. It was named in honor of Gen. J. Pinckney Henderson, the partner and companion of Hon. Thomas Rusk, after whom our county was named. Henderson was a native of North Carolina, and imbued with an undaunted spirit he raised a company of volunteers in Mississippi for the purpose of assisting Texas in her struggle for existence and final independence. In 1857 he was elected to the United States Senate to fill the unexpired term of Gen. Rusk, but died before he took his seat.

¹ Lena Carlton, "Historical Sketch of Henderson," undated clipping in Mrs. J. E. Watkins' scrapbooks on Rusk County.

The town of Henderson was made the county seat in 1844, the same year that it was settled. But before it ever had any existence a court held its session under the shade of a spreading oak at the springs near the residence of Mrs. Yates. A dwelling (as the foundation of Henderson), was erected in 1844, and was occupied by Mr. T. G. Timmons and his wife, Mrs. Frances Timmons, the first settlers.

The pleasant location soon attracted others and during the same year a store house was opened by Mr. J. W. Flanagan. Before the close of the first year the population had sufficiently increased to have a school. This was taught under the management of Rev. J. M. Beckton, Henderson's first preacher. Although a school was taught here in 1844, a schoolhouse was not built until the next year. In 1844 a courthouse made of logs was built on East Street. A few years afterward it was moved nearer the center of town, where it remained until removed to its present situation. The first officers of the court were A. H. Watkins, judge; Wm. M. Ross, sheriff; Isaac Vannoy, clerk; and John C. Miller, district clerk. S. Monroe Hyde was the first lawyer that ever plead for justice in Henderson; and the first law-suit was Mrs. M. C. Buford vs. Robert L. Lane.

Contrasting Henderson fashions of dress in 1844 with the present, what a ludicrous sight it would present to our eyes. Then, the ladies' dresses were made of a combination home-spun, having collar, cuffs, and bonnet of the same piece of goods. The gentlemen's costumes were composed mostly of buckskin.

In those early years the surrounding country contained a few wildcats, wolves and panthers, but they have been driven to other regions, and the milder game, such as turkey, squirrels and deer, have taken their places. In olden times, the game that the hunter delighted most to chase was the swift-footed deer. The old style of hunting was the "still and fire" hunting, and this being done at night they spent the leisure hours of day in shooting small game.

The first blacksmith of Henderson was Dan Whiteman; the first carpenter, Nevil Harmon; the first surveyor, James N. Brown; the first dentist was Dr. R. Rountree. Dr. J. A. S. Parsons was the first practicing physician.

In 1860 Henderson was a thriving and enterprising little town, large enough to have two hotels, several nice dwellings, store houses and public buildings, but that year a destructive fire swept her streets and laid her houses in ashes. But Henderson has ever been fortunate in obtaining energetic and live men as citizens, and she slowly but surely arose and resumed her onward march to prosperity, making a great struggle to become the commercial center of East Texas.

In 1878, the courthouse was consumed by fire and the present one was immediately erected on the same foundation.

The social status of Henderson will compare favorably with that of any town in the state, of equal size. Our people are brave, kind and sociable; they never fail to assure cordiality to a stranger (from whatsoever country he may have come), who by prudent deportment and debonaire courtesy demonstrates his worth.

Henderson can now boast of five churches—the O. S. Presbyterian, Cumberland Presbyterian, Missionary Baptist, Methodist, and Primitive Baptist.

For many years the schools of this place have been good. Henderson College, erected in 1850, has several excellent teachers. Among whom are Profs. Hickey, Cooper, Gathright and Gould. It is now under the efficient management of Dr. L. Gould.

East Texas High School, taught by Mrs. Trammell and daughters, is well attended, receiving an equal share of patronage. The old Methodist Church has been converted into a Masonic hall and school room, and the school is taught by our Methodist pastor's wife, Mrs. J. P. Truitt.

The railroad between Henderson and Overton was completed in 1878. It has greatly increased the wealth of our town, and has been of much commercial benefit to our people. It has made Henderson one of the best cotton markets in East Texas.

The oldest resident citizens living here are Judge A. J. Smith and General Webster Flanagan. The oldest still living is Mr. W. C. Davis, who lives four miles south of town.

I hope that Henderson has a bright future in store for her; that her progress may be onward and upward as it has been in the past; and that by strenuous efforts on the part of the people, she

may, indeed, be the Queen City of East Texas.
—LENA CARLTON

Henderson acquired another weekly newspaper on November 25, 1880, when the **Rusk County News** was established.² The paper was founded by O. W. Dodson and E. W. Harris and took over the **East Texas Beacon**.

In 1882 the Longview and Sabine Valley Railroad, later a part of the Santa Fe system, crossed the northeastern corner of the county connecting sections in Panola County. Along the railroad in Rusk County, stations were established at Easton (Camden), Flanagan, and Tatum.³

Prominent towns in the county in 1884, as reported in the **Texas State Gazetteer and Business Directory**, included Henderson, Mount Enterprise, Minden, Overton, Pinehill, and Harmony Hill. The following description of Henderson was given:

Henderson now contains Cumberland Presbyterian, Methodist, Baptist and old school Presbyterian, four schools, employing seven teachers, and having an average attendance of 300, a bank, several special and general stores, blacksmith shops and the usual number of professional men for a place of its size. Two weekly newspapers, the **Rusk County News** and the **Henderson Times**. The assessed valuation of real and personal property exceeds \$500,000. Telegraph, Western Union, Express. Population 1,400. Daily Mail.⁴

Mount Enterprise at the same time was reported to have a population of one hundred and fifty, two cotton gins, three churches, and a public school. A stage made daily runs to Henderson.⁵

Overton had a population of eight hundred, three churches, a district school, a steam gristmill, and a cotton gin. The principal crops at the time were cotton and fruits.⁶

Pinehill, with a population of three hundred, had two churches, a school, steamgrist and sawmills, and a cotton gin.⁷

At Harmony Hill there were three churches, a district school, four steam cotton gins, and three gristmills. The

² **Texas Newspapers, A Union List of Newspaper Files, 1813-1939**, p. 104.

³ Richardson, **East Texas**, III, 1211.

⁴ **Texas State Gazetteer and Business Directory**, II, 419.

⁵ *Ibid.*, 534.

⁶ *Ibid.*, 552.

⁷ *Ibid.*, 568.

population was one hundred.⁸

By 1890 the population of the county was 18,559.⁹ This was a decrease of 427 from the population of 18,986 reported in 1880.¹⁰

Another railroad came into the county in 1894 with the chartering of the Caro Northern Railway Company.¹¹ The road was built from Caro, Nacogdoches County, to Mount Enterprise, a distance of sixteen and one-half miles. The road was mainly used for hauling timber cut in the area.

The *Gazetteer* for 1896-1897, reported that Henderson's population had reached two thousand. Also reported were four churches, a normal college, public schools, one bank, pottery works, cotton gins, an ice factory, and three weekly newspapers.¹² The Henderson *Times* on September 29, 1898, made mention of the third annual Rusk County Fair.

On November 1, 1898, the *Rusk County News* reported the following on Henderson and Rusk County:

There are about 40 business houses here, including three drug stores, four saloons, two hardware stores, two furniture stores, the balance general merchandise and family grocery stores, all carrying nice large stocks. There is only one bank here, but it has ample capital to do the business of the town. There are three first-class and commodious hotels and two livery stables.

While the manufacturing interests of the town are of no great extent as yet, there is not a more promising field for the establishment of varied manufacturing industries than Henderson. In manufacturing enterprises there are two blacksmith and wagon shops, one pottery, one steam gin, ice factory, tin shop, mattress factory, candy factory, brick yard and machine shop.

... Henderson is the county seat of Rusk County and has a population of about 2500.

Rusk County has the lowest tax rate of any county in the State of Texas, only 30 cents on the \$100. The county is out of debt and has money

⁸ *Ibid.*, 414.

⁹ *Statistics of the Population of the United States at the Tenth Census*, I, 79.

¹⁰ *Thirteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1910*, III, 791.

¹¹ S. G. Reed, *A History of the Texas Railroads*, 448.

¹² *Texas State Gazetteer and Business Directory, 1896-1897*, V, 683.

in its treasury to run its affairs on a strictly cash basis. The assessed valuation for the county for 1898 is \$2,843,130.¹³

Rusk County continued to remain predominantly agricultural with cotton and corn the primary crops. In 1900 the population was 26,099¹⁴ and the United States census reported the following agricultural statistics for the county:

Number of Farms	
Total	4,338
With Buildings	3,994
Acres in Farms	
Total	393,749
Improved	181,590
Value of Farm Property	
Land and Improvements	\$1,541,250
Buildings	632,780
Implements and Machinery	174,110
Live Stock	904,084
Value of Products Not Fed to Live Stock	\$1,576,508
Expenditures	
Labor	32,500
Fertilizers	4,520 ¹⁵

The following is a description of Rusk County after the turn of the last century:

. . . Population in 1900, 26,099. Property assessment 1903, \$3,856,740. . . . Most of the timber is valuable for fencing, building and manufacturing purposes. Large bodies of both pine and oak are to be found yet undisturbed. . . . The red and chocolate soils are very fine for wheat and other grains. Cotton, corn, wheat, sugar cane, sorghum, sweet and Irish potatoes, millet, melons and all other field and garden products are raised in large quantities. Tobacco grown in this portion of the State is equal to that grown in any part of the South. Much attention is being paid to fruit growing. Rusk County seems to be the natural habitat of the peach, plum and the berry, to say nothing of the other things, not forgetting the apple in the highest degree of perfection. Heavy shipments of truck and fruit are being made from the county annually, which are netting the owners and shippers \$150 to \$250 per acre. All classes of berries are grown

¹³ Rusk County News (Henderson), November 1, 1898.

¹⁴ Thirteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1910, III, 791.

¹⁵ Twelfth Census of the United States, V, Agriculture, Part I, p. 301.

here very successfully. . . . Several small vineyards are now in bearing in this county. Apples grown in this section of the State and exhibited at the International Exposition at Atlanta, Ga., were not excelled by those on exhibition from any other part of the United States in size and keeping qualities.

Henderson has a \$50,000 cotton seed oil mill, compress at Overton, large planing mill at Henderson, which uses the material from one-half score or more sawmills surrounding the town. Several pottery works at Henderson, with several small plants surrounding the town. Henderson is a town of 2,500 inhabitants. Overton has 1,000 people. There are 133 public free schools in Rusk County, with a scholastic population of 4,440 and two independent districts.¹⁶

In 1907 C. W. Ely and A. E. Kocher of the United States Department of Agriculture made a soil survey of the area around Henderson. The condition of Rusk County agriculture at the time along with a brief history of agriculture was given in the report titled **Soil Survey of the Henderson Area, Texas**. Interesting excerpts are quoted here:

. . . Immigration was rapid until 1860, but the Civil War turned people's attention to other things, and since then the population has been nearly stationary. The northern and northwestern parts of the area are at present the most thickly settled. In the southern and southeastern parts considerable lumbering is done and the population is scattering. The area could probably support four times its present population. Henderson, the county seat, has a population of only 2,200, and Overton, the next largest town, has about 500. Besides these there are no towns of any size. There is no local market of any importance for small fruits, vegetables, etc. Transportation facilities are inadequate. The main branch of the International and Great Northern Railroad crosses the northwest corner of the area, and a branch, 16 miles long runs from Overton into Henderson. A branch of the Santa Fe touches the northeast corner. These are the only railroads within the area for several miles south. Much of the best land in the area, especially for peaches and tobacco, is more than nine miles away from a railroad, which condition, to a great extent, has hindered development. The wagon roads of the

¹⁶ *Texas Almanac and State Industrial Guide*, 1904, p. 354.



Henderson, About 1900

area are very poor and at times are almost impassable. Little attempt is made to improve them. It is difficult to make a good road because there is no suitable material for surfacing, yet proper grading and drainage would do much to improve present conditions.

As most of the early settlers came from southern states, and as it was natural for them to grow what they had been accustomed to, cotton and corn early became the chief crops. . . .

So far as could be learned, no great change in agricultural practices has taken place, and the methods of cultivating cotton and corn were much the same forty years ago as they are today. . . . With such poor railroad facilities and such poor wagon roads, the products of the area must be such as can stand being hauled long distances without damage. Cotton and corn fulfill this requirement, and hence have always been the chief crops. . . . About two-fifths of the land is under cultivation, and seven-eighths of this land is planted to cotton or corn. The other crops are cowpeas, peanuts, sorghum, peaches, and potatoes.

. . . . Slightly less than one-half of the farms in the Henderson area are operated by the owners. Near Henderson some farms rent for from \$2 to \$4 an acre cash, but away from the towns a rent of one-fourth of the cotton and one-third of the corn is generally paid when the tenant furnishes the teams, implements, and seed. If the landlord furnishes these, he receives one-half of the crops. The average-sized farm is about 75 acres, but only about one-half of that is cultivated land, or about what can be cultivated with one mule. There are some large tracts of 15,000 acres or more held by individuals. Land values range from \$2 to \$25 an acre near town. Over the county as a whole the price of land would average less than \$8 an acre.¹⁷

As the lumbering industry in Rusk and Panola counties grew, another railroad, the Timpson and Henderson, was built in 1908 from Timpson, Shelby County, to Pinehill. The road was extended on to Henderson in 1909. Chartered as the Timpson and Northwestern Railroad, the road was built by W. C. and Frank Ragley from Timpson to Pinehill, and was better known as the "Ragley Road."

¹⁷ C. W. Ely and A. E. Kocher, *Soil Survey of the Henderson Area, Texas*, 6-9.

When the road was extended to Henderson, the name was changed on June 29, 1909, to the Timpson and Henderson Railroad.¹⁸

On November 12, after the driving of a golden spike in Henderson by Corinne Langhorne, traffic service began between Henderson and Pinehill.¹⁹ A big picnic was held at the scene of the driving of the spike, and an excursion train with twelve passenger coaches brought people to Henderson for the event. The road boasted the most crooked track in Texas, and it was claimed that a snake could not negotiate its curves.²⁰

Lumber traffic was the principal business of the Timpson and Henderson Railroad, but cotton shipments became considerable. By 1923 most of the timber in the area around the road had been cut, and since there was not enough other traffic to maintain support, it was abandoned that year.²¹ During only two years of its existence did the road make more than operating expenses.²²

By 1910 the population of Rusk County was 26,946.²³ This was an increase of only 847 for the preceding ten years when in 1900 a population of 26,099 was reported.²⁴

The **Texas Almanac** gave the following description of Rusk County in 1910:

(Rusk County) Truck farming is one of the leading industries; potatoes, cabbage and tomatoes are grown commercially, and last year there were shipped 200 cars of potatoes, 20 cars of cabbage and 25 cars of tomatoes. The tax rolls show 18,430 cattle, 8,609 horses and mules, 9,186 hogs, 630 goats and 224 sheep. It is claimed by the experts that oil and gas exist in vast quantities beneath the surface of this county. Excellent potter's clay is found in large quantities, and there is a pottery works in Henderson, with several small plants surrounding the town. There is a large flouring mill at Henderson and 12 or 15 sawmills in the county. It is estimated that there are 500,000,000 feet of standing merchantable timber. There are 160 public free schools.²⁵

¹⁸ S. G. Reed, *A History of the Texas Railroads*, 479.

¹⁹ *Henderson Times*, September 15, 1938.

²⁰ Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagued.

²¹ Reed, *Texas Railroads*, 479.

²² *Henderson Times*, September 15, 1938.

²³ *Thirteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1910*, III, 791.

²⁴ *Ibid.*

²⁵ *Texas Almanac and State Industrial Guide*, 1910, p. 255.

Agricultural statistics for 1910 were as follows:

Number of all farms	4,894
Land area (acres)	629,120
Land in farms (acres)	451,626
Improved land in farms	239,724
Woodland in farms	204,041
Per cent of land in farms	71.8
Per cent of farm land improved	53.1
Average acres per farm	92.3
Average improved acres per farm	49.0
All farm property (dollars)	6,158,707
Farms reporting domestic animals	4,625
Value of domestic animals (dollars)	1,443,362 ²⁶

A considerable increase in Rusk County's population was shown in 1920, when 31,689 residents were reported.²⁷ The census for 1910 had reported 26,946.²⁸ This increase of 4,743 between 1910 and 1920 was considerably more than the increase of 857 between 1900 and 1910.

Agricultural statistics for 1910 were as follows:

Number of farms	6,059
Land in farms (acres)	486,963
Value of farm property	\$18,882,274
Farms operated by owners	3,068
Farms operated by managers	7
Farms operated by tenants	2,984 ²⁹

Rusk County and Henderson received the following descriptions in the Texas **Almanacs** in 1925 and 1926:

. . . This County has one of the best systems of good roads in Texas, and by close supervision and efficient work this has been accomplished by an expenditure of only a little over one million dollars. . . . There are 180 miles of improved highways.

High Schools are located at Henderson, Overton, Tatum, Laneville, Minden, and Mount Enterprise.³⁰

Henderson. Population, 1920: 2,273; 1925, 2,800. City government, aldermanic. Water system under municipal ownership; source of supply, lake. Telephone connections, 600. Power and light: furnished by local plant privately owned. Pavement: hard

²³ Thirteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1910, Vol. VII, Agriculture, p. 650.

²⁷ Fourteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1910, II, 1010.

²⁸ Thirteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1910, III, 791.

²⁹ Fourteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1920, Vol. I. Part 2, Agriculture, 664.

³⁰ Texas Almanac and State Industrial Guide, 1925, p. 339.

surface, 5.5 miles; light surface, 3.5 miles. City assessed valuation, \$2,144,000. Schools: one high and two grade, with total enrollment of 950.

Henderson is a good business town situated on the International-Great Northern Railroad in one of the best diversified farming areas in Texas. Much cotton is produced and Henderson is a market and shipping point for sweet potatoes, melons, peaches, and other truck crops. There is a lumber mill, veneering plant, large wholesale grocery house, three banks and about 140 other business establishments.

Overton. Population 1920, 528; 1925, 600. City government, aldermanic. Water source of supply, shallow wells. Telephone connections, 50. Power and light, furnished by privately owned plant. City assessed valuation, \$170,000. Schools: one high and one grade, with total enrollment of 250.

Two or three saw mills near the town, two banks, and about thirty business houses.³¹

Varney Hawkins, writing in the **Texas Monthly**, in December, 1928, told how an Englishman found Rusk County at the time. Hawkins wrote:

... 'Come to East Texas,' we invited him (the Englishman). 'There we will disclose to you a county as Anglo-Saxon as your own Eltham in your right little, tight little isle of Albio.'

He came. He found a county as English in make-up as it is in name. A county which he raked fore and aft, back and forth, up and down. He rode over it, drove over it, tramped over it with only his stout English cudgel for company and needed no guide, and in all its length and breadth of more than 700 square miles he could not unearth half a dozen names that were not derived from the Britain of Will Shakespeare's fame.

The county is Rusk, as matter-of-factly of English origin as the name of its county-seat. Those early-day settlers, when part of the northern end of Nacogdoches was lopped off in 1843 to become Rusk County, bore witness to their heredity by giving their villages, post-offices and even the creeks, appellations handed down largely from their ancestors. Not only do a number of those names endure to the present day but all later settlements, with one exception, are equally Anglo-Saxon in nomenclature.

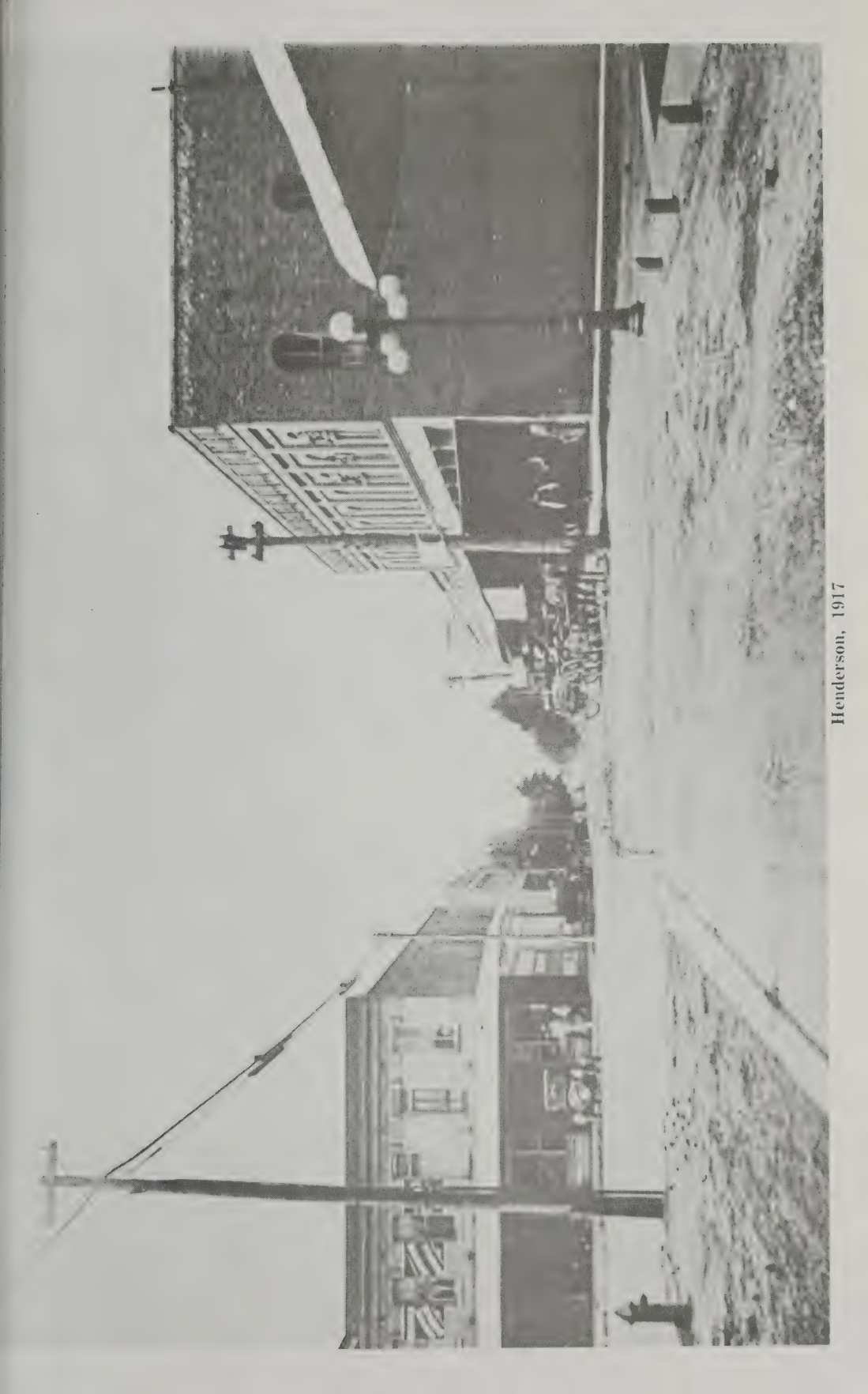
³¹ *Ibid.*, 1926, p. 256.



Henderson, 1917



Henderson, 1917



Henderson, 1917



Henderson, 1917

Considered merely as words they lack the vivid Spanish melody of Guadalupe and Matagorda, San Saba and Zapata, Navarro and Corpus Christi. They do not have the rhythmic accents of Sarita and Bandera, Lometa and Lavaca. They do not stir the imagination with the fervor evoked by Concho and Comanche, Cherokee and Navasota, or way-lay emotions with piquancy of Goliad and Refugio, San Jacinto and Gonzales. They do not roll off the tongue with the Teutonic thickness of New Braunfels nor Boerne, Fredericksburg nor Carlsbad. In all Rusk County there is not Van Anything, no La So-and-so, no suffix of-burg. There is poetry of a sort to be found but it is of no foreign flamboyant flavor but due to that love of Nature and her manifestations innate in the pure Anglo-Saxon. . . .

It interested the traveler to make a list of the names of Rusk County people whose names have been familiar in England for hundreds of years. He delved into tax rolls, records of all kinds, deeds and instruments of every variety. He listed the post offices of Rusk County in 1856. Out of twenty there was only one with any vestige of the prevailing Spanish atmosphere of that time. This was San Cosma, but it could not have survived long under that name. No one today knows its location. The others were Alma, Belleview, Caledonia, Calhoun, Cambridge, Camden, Center, Cotton Plant, Fredonia, Harmony Hill, Millville, Mount Enterprise, Murvall, New Danville, New Salem, Pine Hill, Sand Hill, Walling's Ferry and, of course, Henderson. The Britisher was full of curiosity about the present state and conditions of those quondam post offices.

. . . Belleview years ago merged into the village of Pirtle. . . . Harmony Hill is as pathetically deserted as Sweet Auburn. . . . New Salem with half its houses untenanted and rotting down on its rolling hills, is full of treasure-trove for antique hunters, and an artist would revel in its picturesque qualities. Mount Enterprise kept its name but changed its home. . . . Caledonia and Millville are only community names now and filling stations are the gathering-places. . . . We took our English friend to see London and Norfolk to make him homesick, and then with a touch of malice to Bunker Hill. . . . That Rusk County is rugged in topography is suggested by Church Hill, Pigeon Hill, Pine Hill and Zion Hill, not to mention Wood Glen. The dense

forests and abounding springs are preserved to memory by Hickory Grove, Sulphur Springs, Oak Grove, Oak Flat, Pleasant Grove and Good Springs. We must admit, however, that in early days the two latter were known by the repugnant if less euphonious terms of Shake Rag and Lick-Skillet. Harmony Hill, by the way, was generally designated as Nip an' Tuck.

Ebenezer, Shiloh, Concord, Elysian Fields and Numerous Chapels testify to the religious trend of those primitive times, and that optimism was the sole commodity of a dazed and impoverished section during those unhappy decades from 1860 until 1890—when population stood still, enterprise and progress were nil and only virtue and hope were left—is indicated by three settlements which originated during that era: Mount Hope, Good Hope and New Hope, though to this day the latter is more often called Chicken Feather than the choicer even though hackneyed New Hope.

But, as has already been mentioned, it was the names of the pioneers themselves which most thoroughly titillated the price and interest of the visitor. . . . In the town of Henderson he was in his own element with a mayor named Rogers; aldermen Rayford and Templeton; sheriff McMurray; Judges Brown and Arnold, McDavid and Watson and Cooper; Doctors Sadler, Dawson, Deason, Ross, Osborne, Menefee, White and Watkins. It was right as rain for the chief of police to be Hays, the fire chief Gibbons, the constables Hardy and Reeves. What more natural than to meet business men named Hightower, Alfred, Wright, Harris, Young, Griffin, Allen, Forman, English and Bassett? Bankers called Crim and Norvell, and preachers as English-sounding as Wilson and Wood and Davidson. 'Why our ranking prelate in England, the Archbishop of Canterbury, is named Randall Thomas Davison.' The names he heard in Rusk County were manna in a weary land that fed his homesick heart, and—to change the figure of speech—had the miraculous power to cheer his ears. . . .

In Rusk County at a country party in a frame house that was full of inconsistencies to our visitor because it was what he called jerry-built yet had its own electric lighting plant, and hot and cold water in rooms that were not built to keep out the cold in winter nor heat in summer, he met with the supreme inconsistency of his whole trip. He



Henderson, About 1925

saw girls with permanent waves and knee-length silken frocks and boys with patent-leather hair and tailored suits, dance and sing their way through a "kissing game" and the measure was one that was not new when Shakespeare trod it and the song was a ballad that was sung in Merrie England three hundred years ago exactly as it is in Rusk County today.³²

In 1929 the Henderson Chamber of Commerce issued a pamphlet titled, **Henderson, Rusk County, Texas**, giving information about the county and county seat. The following was a description of Henderson at that time:

It has a population of nearly 4,000 people, with 5½ miles of brick or asphalt streets, many miles of concrete sidewalks, an abundant water supply, natural gas, electric power plant, city sewerage, oil mill, modern bakery, ice factory, fertilizer factory, cotton compress, two bottling works, lumber and planing mills, and a trade area of 45,000 people.³³

The following information was given in connection with the county:

There are approximately 4,000 individual farms in the county, nearly 3,000 of which are worked by farm owners themselves. The character of the farm houses and improvements is far above the average, many of the best homes in the county being located on the farms, with all modern conveniences. Education is on a high scale, with several consolidated high schools at community centers, housed in well constructed brick buildings.

Being one of the first of the East Texas Counties to adopt a good roads building program, it has forged rapidly to the front. Over two hundred miles of paved or graveled highways radiate from Henderson throughout the county. Three State highways and one transcontinental highway traverse the county, passing through Henderson, and practically every community in the county is served by one or more good highways.³⁴

As the decade of the 1920's drew to a close there was a need for a new and larger courthouse. Located in the center of the public square, the courthouse had been constructed in 1878. It had served half a century when the new courthouse was built in 1928. The following descrip-

³² Varney Hawkins, "An Anglo-Saxon County," **Texas Monthly**, II, Number 5, pp. 691-698.

³³ **Henderson, Rusk County, Texas**, pamphlet published by the Henderson Chamber of Commerce, 1920, unpagged.

³⁴ *Ibid.*

tion of the old courthouse has been given:

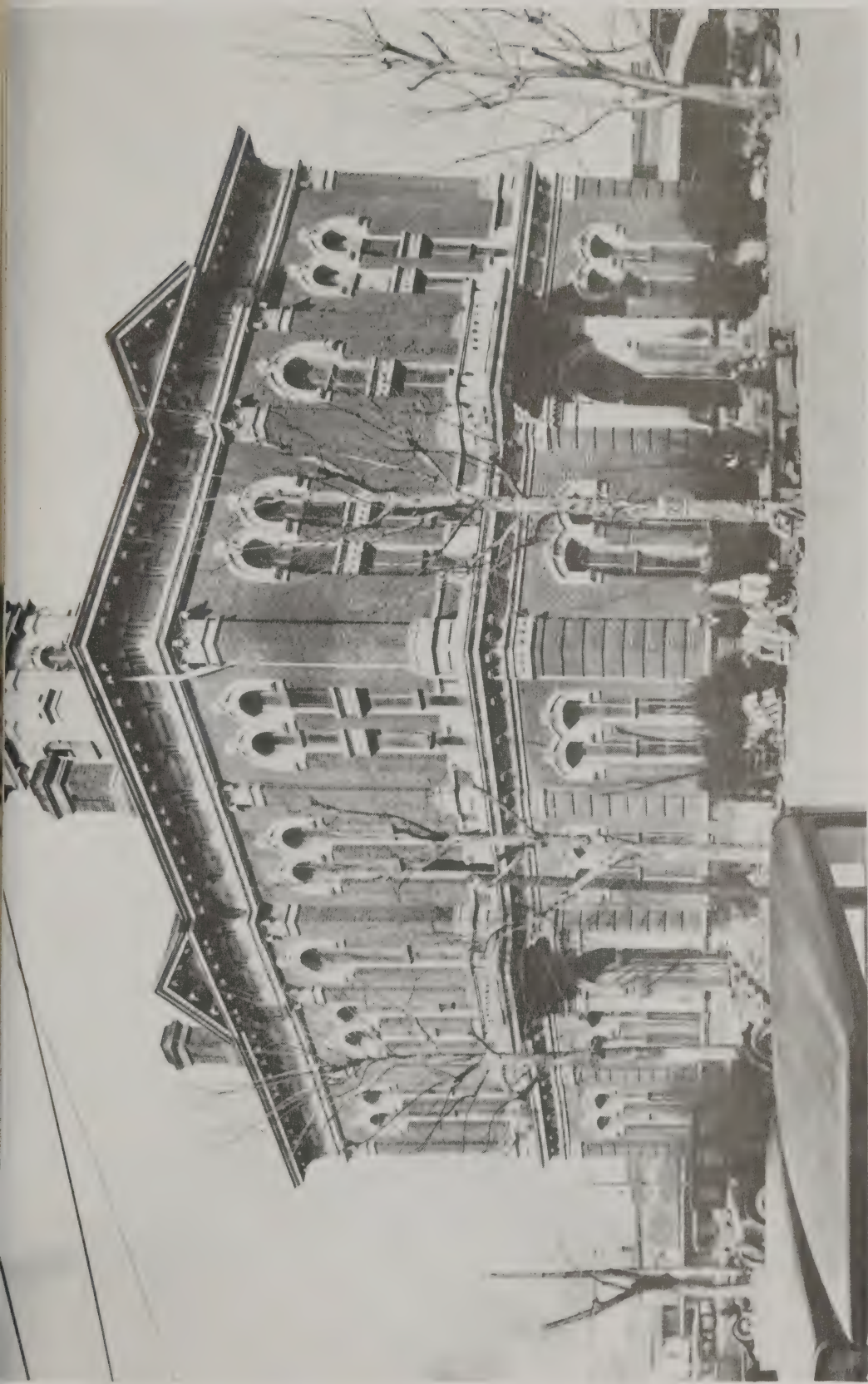
The center of old Henderson was its courthouse in the middle of the square, a red brick structure topped with a cupola. It crowned the top of the hill on which the town is located, and was surrounded by a small yard planted with a row of sycamore trees. The benches out under the trees were always warmed by the numerous members of the famous Sycamore Club, an organization formed for the sole purpose of passing the time away. Its members held records for whittling, long-distance and fancy spitting and daily settled to their own satisfaction all domestic and world problems brought to their attention. They made and unmade political candidates, and aside from the "dog-eating" and fox-hunting brotherhoods, were about the most influential political organization in the county.³⁵

Dabney White, writer for the Dallas **Morning News**, on revisiting Henderson during the 1930's had this to write about old Henderson with its courthouse:

It is our old and lovable Henderson that we cherish our fondest memories. A long time ago I rode horseback into Henderson, seeking data for this paper (Dallas **News**). Then the courthouse occupied the center of the square and it was surrounded by aged and umbrageous trees under which then the leading citizens and old-time warriors congregated almost daily and retold how battles were won and recalled also great political contests that were waged between historic Texans. The modern town builders have torn down our historic courthouse.

It was in the courthouse of Henderson that Sam Houston and Frank Bowden met and argued the merits and demerits of Know-Nothingism. Frank Bowden, ex-congressman from Alabama, lived and died here. Governor Roberts is my authority for saying that Bowden was the greatest orator Texas ever contained. He, alone, in his palmy days was the one orator who could drive Houston from the rostrum. Across the square was situated then the village tavern. There the guests slept on fat feather beds and ate breakfast, dinner and supper at one long table, little Negroes in season fanning away the affectionate flies from the near-by livery stable, while sleeping hounds howled mournfully while the tavern's bell summoned us to that table, always

³⁵ Myrtis Dean Watkins, "Henderson Struts Her Stuff," Dallas **Morning News**, March 29, 1931.



Rusk County Courthouse, Henderson, 1878-1929

groaning under its load of substantial victuals. Modern town builders have torn down our old-time tavern of pleasing memories.

MANY FAMOUS LAWYERS

Then Henderson contained and proudly claimed a distinguished bench and bar. Martin Casey, a little Irishman and one of the greatest but most unique characters of that period, practiced here for many years, as well as in every other court in Texas. Governor Roberts is my authority for saying that he was the most scholarly lawyer of that period. He had practiced in the Queen's Court before coming to Texas. Even now oldtimers tell many anecdotes about the peculiar old man who died almost penniless and friendless and without any known relatives.³⁶

Myrtis and Pax Watkins, in their book **In Old Rusk County**, call attention to the sentiment the old-timers had for the old courthouse when it was being torn down. The following resolutions of the Rusk County Bar Association were made on February 9, 1929:

Whereas the hour has struck when the parting of the old Court House of Rusk County, which has stood as a temple of justice in the service of the citizenship of Rusk County for fifty years. The half of a century that has passed into history the many strifes and contentions that have been unraveled within this honorable and sacred chamber has heard the clarion voices of many of the ablest jurists and lawyers that have adorned the bench and bar of East Texas. Sacred are the memories that cling around the heartstrings of the lawyers that have been initiated into the practice of the honorable profession within the court room; dear to the hearts of the lawyers who have made their maiden efforts within these walls of this ancient temple are the recollections of other days; sweet are the memories of the victories won within this room, and sad are the recollections of the defeats that have come to the losers, but deep are the sentiments that shall ever cling around the scenes of other days.

Time has decreed that the hour has arrived to give and extend the parting hand to this old temple that has well so honorably served for these many years. A new building stands north of us, beckon-

³⁶ Dallas Morning News, April 21, 1935; Frontier Times, XIII, Number 1, October, 1935, p. 56.

ing with extended hands to come and see what waits our arrival.

Therefore, be it resolved, that we extend our parting hands to this old building with the deep appreciation for the valuable service it has rendered to the citizenship of Rusk County for fifty years, and commend its past usefulness and service to those patriots who conceived and built it for service to our common country and dedicated it to the public administration of justice.³⁷

When the old courthouse was torn down many persons felt that an era was drawing to a close for the county. This was true, although no one knew it at the time. The new decade of 1930 would bring the era of oil.

³⁷ Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagged.

CHAPTER VI

OIL IN RUSK COUNTY

Rusk County remained basically agricultural from the time of the Civil War until the discovery of oil in 1930. It was often said that the only way to make a living was to "plow, plant, and plow again." For nearly a century the residents had been living on the soil, raising cotton, sweet potatoes, and corn, operating gins and sawmills.¹

The first oil well drilled in Rusk County, about 1911, was under the direction of the Millville Oil Company and located at Millville about nine miles northeast of Henderson. This well, drilled by O. P. Boynton, failed to reach any oil. Several other wells were drilled in the eastern part of the county, particularly around Pinehill, without success.²

In August, 1927, Columbus Marion (Dad) Joiner came into Rusk County and made the first location for his Daisy Bradford No. 1 in the Juan Ximines Survey approximately six miles west of Henderson.³ Joiner and his associates encountered a number of difficulties in the preparations for drilling. Business conditions were at a low ebb and money was difficult to obtain. Memory of the earlier failure was another deterrent. A main cause was that geologists of the major oil companies as well as government experts had repeatedly declared there was no oil in the area of East Texas where Joiner wished to drill.⁴ With his first test Joiner encountered many obstacles; mostly these were attributed to inferior equipment. After working for six months he junked the hole and the test was abandoned at a depth of 1,098 feet.

Tom Jones, Henderson, Texas, resident helped Joiner drill the first well in 1927, and he has given the following information concerning this venture:

Most of the drillers were county boys. I was to drill the well and Joiner was to raise the money by selling leases. I did not have enough money

¹ Harry Harter, *East Texas Oil Parade*, 46.

² Mrs. Jimmie Harris to D. W., October 10, 1950, University of Texas Archives.

³ H. E. Minor and Marcus A. Hanna, "East Texas Oil Field," *Bulletin of the American Association of Petroleum Geologists*, 757.

⁴ *Dallas Morning News*, August 30, 1936.

of my own to finish the well, but I met the payroll for a time. Joiner never could raise any money so I would sell leases and run the well a while. For a time we lived in tents and paid the crews in leases. . . . It was always the same old thing—not enough money. We were all broke. All. Times were hard and South America was the only place I knew to get money. I borrowed money to get out of town and with my Super-Six Hudson went to New Orleans.⁵

A second test, the Bradford No. 2, was not made until April, 1928, and was located some 100 feet northwest of the Bradford No. 1. Financial difficulties caused eleven months of intermittent drilling, and when the well reached a depth of 2,518 feet it was junked and abandoned like its predecessor.⁶

Joiner still had faith in his project and sacrificed much of his original 10,000-acre block in order to finance the third well. For the Bradford No. 3 he located only 300 feet south of his original well.⁷ The well attracted little attention and was given almost no mention in the press. The crew fired the oil boiler with pine trees cut in the vicinity. Many members of the crew worked for a time without salaries.⁸ Most of the equipment was second hand. The boilers which were to furnish the steam for the engine and pumps were second hand and mis-mated. At one time a cotton gin boiler, rated at ninety horsepower, was used.⁹ In January, 1930, the well reached a depth of 1,530 feet. After a brief shutdown drilling was resumed in the spring. Work was continued, and on September 5, the bit hit Woodbine sand and the core came up dripping with

⁵ Tom Jones to D. W., February 22, 1951.

⁶ Minor and Hanna, "East Texas Oil Field," *Bulletin of the American Association of Petroleum Geologists*, 759.

⁷ The well was drilled on land belonging to Mrs. Daisy Bradford. Sixty-two years old at the time, Mrs. Bradford was living on the farm where she was born, a farm which had been in her family for a hundred years. According to an article in the *Reader's Digest*, December, 1931, titled "Black Gold and Red Ink," Mrs. Bradford had refused to let Joiner drill the third well where he had chosen. She wanted a garden in that particular spot and made him pick another location 300 yards to the east. Later tests showed that the spot Joiner had chosen would have most probably missed the oil pool. As a matter of fact, his No. 3 just barely did puncture the oil reserve.

⁸ Carrie J. Crouch, "The Oil Fields of Texas," *National Republic*, 20.

⁹ Harry Harter, *East Texas Oil Parade*, 53.

Capital Stock

\$20,000

Millville Oil Company

INCORPORATED UNDER THE LAWS OF THE STATE OF TEXAS

This Certifies that

is the owner of

Shares of that Capital Stock of

MILLVILLE OIL COMPANY, Full Paid and Non-Assessable

transferable subject to the rules of the Company by the holder thereof in person or by Attorney upon surrender of this Certificate properly witnessed.

IN WITNESS WHEREOF, the said Company has caused this Certificate to be signed by its duly authorized officers and to be attested by the Seal of the Company at Houston, Texas, this 1st day of January, 1911.

Wm. H. Miller
President

100

oil.¹⁰ Joiner's hopes of finding oil were materializing now after months of perseverance and determination. On October 3, the Daisy Bradford No. 3 came in as a 300-barrel well at a depth of 3,592 feet.¹¹

E. H. Laster, driller on the well, gave a good idea of some difficulties Joiner and his associates met during the months they attempted to bring in the well:

I don't know how we ever got the well down. This was the hardest well I ever drilled—the machinery was almost impossible and yet I had good luck at all times with the hole. Only one or two minor fishing jobs; the hole didn't cave in. I was expecting it to cave in on me at any time, for we had no money to buy casing with.

I got no salary for months and months at a time. When I did get paid I put it right back in the well, paying for repairs and other things. For this, Joiner, who is, I think, a mighty fine man, just as sincere as anyone I have ever known, gave me a 40-acre lease a little over a quarter of a mile from the well but a royalty interest, a one-fourth interest, in 100 acres close to the well.¹²

An eye witness account of what took place the day the well came in is given by Mrs. Jimmie Harris:

I was there when the well came in. I was on the derrick but a few minutes before it came over the top. I held a handkerchief over the hole and watched it rise. Then I got off the derrick and in but a few minutes I heard the roar and saw the black gold come over the derrick. Mr. Rade Kangerga was standing near us and asked, 'Could that be oil?' Then they asked everyone to put out the cigarettes. Why the boiler smoke with the cinders did not catch us all afire is a miracle.¹³

Immediately an oil boom hit Rusk County, and Henderson, as county seat, became a typical "boom town." Almost overnight Henderson was changed from a farmers'

¹⁰ Kilgore News Herald (20th Annual Edition), September, 1950, states that "September 5, 1930, has gone into the record books as the official discovery date of the East Texas Field, but it was exactly a month before the Daisy Bradford No. 3 was actually brought in."

¹¹ Dallas Morning News, October 5, 1930. Carl Coke Rister says in his *Oil! Titan of the Southwest* (p. 309) that "It was not until Friday night, October 3, that that well blew in, throwing a spray of gas and oil over the crown block. Here was a tense moment. Joiner, pale with excitement, leaned for support against the derrick; and the watching throng roared a hilarious shout."

¹² Dallas Morning News, September 14, 1930.

¹³ Mrs. Jimmie Harris to D. W., October 10, 1950, University of Texas Archives.

headquarters to a stomping ground of hundreds of oil scouts. A newspaper clipping at the time reveals the following:

This whole section is seething with oil excitement. The town is intoxicated. The short cotton crop and the shorter prices are forgotten. The drouth hasn't been mentioned in a week.¹⁴

The discovery of oil was soon on the front page of the newspapers, and three days after the well came in the Dallas **Morning News** reported:

By the following Saturday people from all sections rushed to the new field. Experienced writers sought futilely to describe this human avalanche. A Henderson observer told of seeing a string of automobiles miles long on the Henderson - Tyler highway. The entire distance from Henderson to the new well, about seven miles, was crowded to such an extent that cars could only make four to six miles an hour.¹⁵

Events moved fast in Rusk County and Henderson during the month of October. The depression was almost forgotten. Oil machinery from the adjacent Texas, Louisiana, Arkansas, and Oklahoma fields began moving in almost at once. Everywhere in the vicinity of the Bradford No. 3, derricks went up. During this October, usually "cotton-picking time" in Rusk County, the following scenes were typical:

Cotton, upon which this area had depended for a century as its "cash" crop, began to pop under the hot September sun. The red sandy hills glistened with white fleece, ready for pickers; but cotton went unpicked.

Farmers who owned the cotton were too busy seeking better and better prices for leases and royalties on their poor farm lands. Negroes, upon whom the white farmers depended largely for extra help at cotton-picking time, felt the surge of enthusiasm that swept all before it like a sudden tidal wave. Some of them owned land and were reaping undreamed-of wealth from their leases and royalties. Young bucks who owned no land found more lucrative employment in the booming towns of the district.

¹⁴ Undated clippings in Mrs. J. E. Watkins' scrapbooks on Rusk County.

¹⁵ Dallas **Morning News**, October 6, 1930.



Crew that drilled the Joiner Discovery Well. C. M. (Dad) Joiner (left) is shaking hands with A. D. Lloyd, Geologist

The cotton went unpicked, but few worried. "Good-bye, hard times!" was the slogan among farmers, as many figuratively thumbed their noses at the stunted cotton stalks feebly beckoning them.

All eyes were on the Joiner well. Each time a joint of casing was lowered and set the news spread that oil soon would be squirting over the crown-block.

Speculators, traders and those who had no money with which either to speculate or trade, thronged the streets of Henderson, making every day look like Circus Day. The Oil Exchange was a scene of confusion and frenzied activity from early morning until well into the night. Traders with check-books under one arm and a map under the other, thronged the streets, button-holing each other and farmers who still had leases and royalty to sell.¹⁶

The following scene was taking place in Henderson:

The First National Bank and Citizens National Bank each reported that the deposits in their respective banks increased approximately \$150,000 each within a week after oil was struck in the Joiner well. Within the first seven-day period it was estimated Rusk County people had received at least \$500,000 for leases and royalties within a seven-day period.

Henderson has largely forgotten low-priced cotton. Along with the oil men, the little city has received a small host of abstractors, stenographers, map makers and lawyers as well as representatives of other lines of business and professions. Business houses and habitations are at a premium. A formerly vacant residence recently was reported as having rented for \$100 a month.

More than 1,200 legal instruments pertaining to leases and royalties were filed with County Clerk W. T. Arnold during the first week, and his clerical force was immediately increased to meet the emergency. Twenty-five typists were to be found in the courthouse by the end of the week.¹⁷

Another interesting picture of Henderson, six months after oil was discovered, is the following:

Now that oil has begun sprouting over scores of derricks that dot the wooded hills of Rusk County, the world—the oil world, at any rate—seems to be making a path to the sleepy little East Texas town of Henderson. At least, we used to be sleepy. Now

¹⁶ Ruel McDaniel, *Some Ran Hot*, 28, 29.

¹⁷ "Flowing Gold," *East Texas*, 19.

we Hendersonites dodge cars like veterans of a thousand traffic jams and talk excitedly about location, royalties and prorations with the nonchalance of lease hounds. But withal we are still not acclimated to the new conditions. We find it queer not to know and call by name everybody in town. Now the streets are full of strangers and we may not even know the people in the next house, packed as they are like sardines into the available space, but unfortunately active sardines.¹⁸

Henderson, with a population slightly less than three thousand at the time of the discovery, was not big enough to take care of the avalanche that rolled in. It was necessary to expand with a big building program. Nine months after the discovery the Dallas **Morning News** on June 14, 1931, reported that the following had taken place in Henderson:

Results following a building campaign inaugurated by the chamber of commerce here have been most satisfactory. It was conducted through the local press, by letter and by personal solicitation.

Issuance of building permits in Henderson began only last month, hence figures for previous months are not available. It is conservatively estimated that the building construction since Jan. 1 of this year will aggregate a little more than \$500,000. This is divided between business and residential structures.

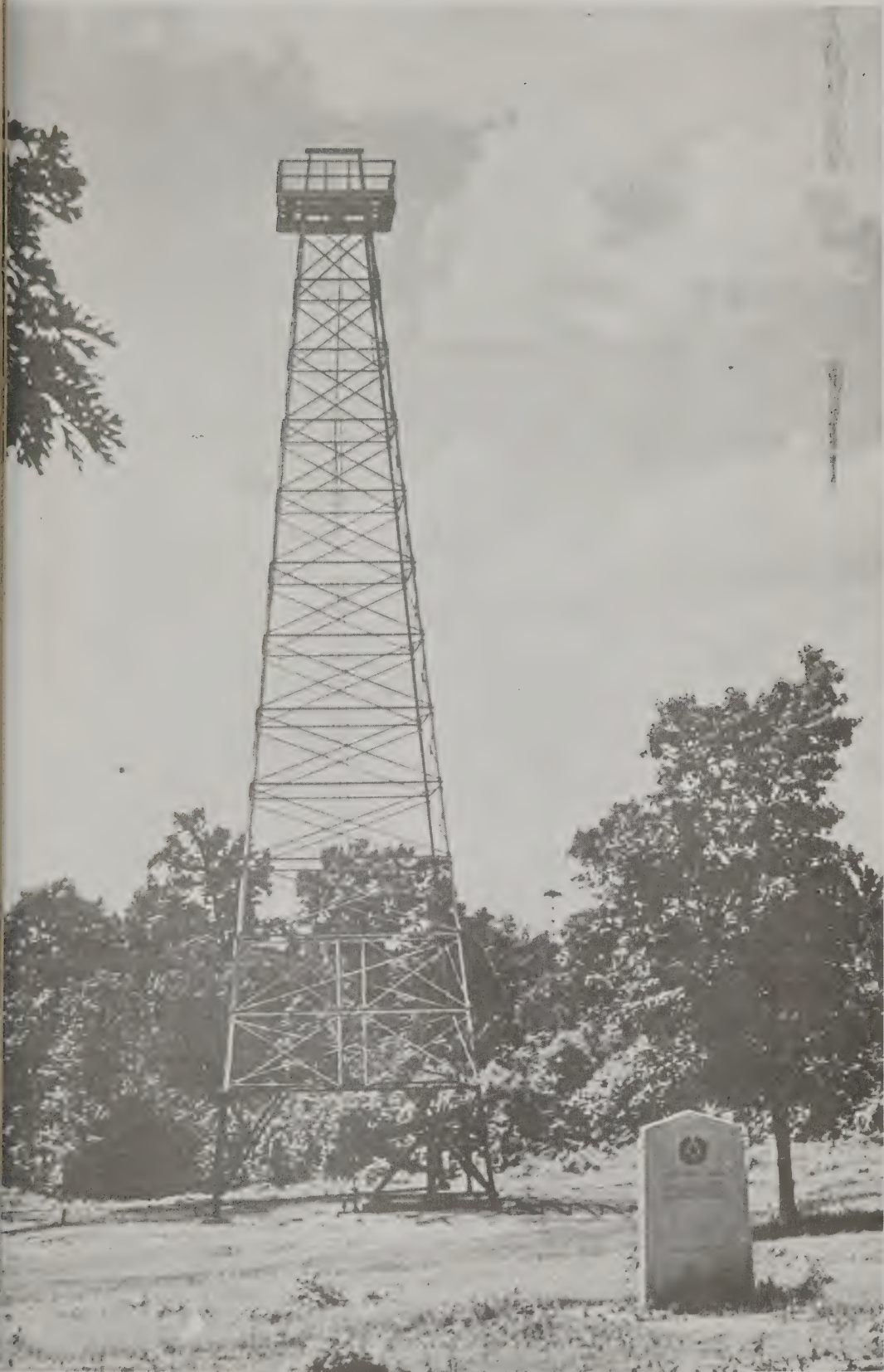
One of the largest buildings completed recently at Henderson is the Hotel Randolph, the formal opening of which took place on May 27. It is a three-story, seventy-five-room structure, each room provided with a bath. Seven store and office spaces are furnished on the first floor. The new building has an annex of forty rooms. An investment of about \$75,000 is represented in the Randolph Hotel.

Two stores are being added to the First National Bank Building at an estimated cost of approximately \$40,000.

M. Kangerga & Brother are adding to the store they own, a two-story fireproof annex. Both floors will be utilized for office space. When completed, the building will total an expenditure of about \$35,000.

Within the last sixty days fifteen or twenty business buildings have been completed or are under

¹⁸ Myrtis Dean Watkins, "Henderson Struts Her Stuff," Dallas **Morning News**, March 29, 1931.



The Joiner Discovery Well with Texas Centennial Marker

construction.

As evidence of the demand for housing in Henderson, when the oil strike became apparent, County Clerk W. T. Arnold lived in a house located on an acre of ground. He owned the property, occupied by himself and wife. When the scarcity of houses became pronounced, Mr. Arnold built five rent houses on the remainder of the acre of ground, each being occupied by two families, average seven to the house, or a total of thirty-seven people on one acre of ground.¹⁹

One of the best descriptions of the "boom town" of Henderson and the oil field area with its changes and color has been given by Harry Harter in his **East Texas Oil Parade**, with portions quoted here:

The well lay about one mile north of the paved highway connecting Henderson and Tyler. At the point in the highway, six miles west from Henderson, where the road turned off toward the well, lots were staked off by the industrious landowners and a building boom was on. Soon cafes, grocery stores, gasoline stations, cold drinks stands and drug stores were opened for business, and a thriving business it was. Sawmills were receiving the first real orders they had had in several years. Within twenty-four hours from the discovery an entire town sprang up.

The languid thoroughfare where traffic yesterday was but the placid routine travel of a stale farming community underwent a radical transfiguration. The turning point in the road became a caravanserai. Every class of vehicle, from glistening Cadillacs and Lincolns down to the lowly rattletrap, flivvers nosed their way into the new oil empire. Along the road to the well, crudely lettered signs advertised "Rooms for Rent" and were quickly altered to read "Cots 50c a Night." No one needed to ask the direction of the well, for the country road had become a solid phalanx of traffic. Amid the din of hammer and saw rose a tumult of sound from motor vehicles, as well as the crack of the whip of the four-up mule teams hauling in heavy oil field machinery. In no time, the country road became impassable. Enterprising individuals cut a new roadway and erected a one-way bridge over Johnson's Creek, leading to the well, and charged a toll of fifty cents for each pas-

¹⁹ Dallas Morning News, June 14, 1931.

senger car and considerably more for trucks.

Up on the highway, a mile from the well, the offspring of the discovery of oil, unheralded and unchristened save for the blasphemy of countless laboring men, Joinerville was born!

In Henderson, the owners of the Just-Right Hotel, where once a dozen guests meant a prosperous week, were sent scurrying to the furniture dealers for extra beds. It was quickly discovered in this city that a double room would contain six or eight people. Private homes soon were filled with "paying guests" and the man who could get a decent room for fifteen dollars a week was indeed fortunate. Dining room furniture became almost useless, as family after family began to eat in the kitchen and rent out the dining room for an extra bedroom. What did it matter? All the best people were besieged with demands for bedrooms. Even the mayor had to give up part of his home. The newcomers themselves, as in any oil boom community, set the prices for their accommodations. Could banker Jones help it, if someone begged him to take sixty or seventy dollars a month for his spare bedroom?

Everywhere signs declared the opening of this or that new subdivision. Lots were sold for ten times the value of the same space a month earlier. A new hotel was planned. The schools became so crowded that pupils attended classes only half a day. Banks profited from the effect of the oil activity as the frozen paper, cotton and farm mortgages of yesterday were paid off by the farmers who, one by one, sold their oil rights. Old established law firms began to feel the pressure of the boom. Titles had to be examined before the money for leases could be delivered. Abstract and title companies were overwhelmed with orders for new abstracts of titles. Long forgotten papers were dug out of their hiding places and rushed to the county clerk's office for recording as the admonition that a "wise man records his deed" was recalled.

In the wake of the boom, came the inevitable influx of humanity. New legal talent, oil field supply agents, scouts, promoters, sharp-shooters, engineers, surveyors, secretaries, adventurers and gamblers poured into the new oil land. In Henderson, the local telephone service, with its single circuit to Dallas, was in a frenzy. A thousand or more long distance calls every twenty-four hours was not un-

usual. Weary operators advised: "Sorry, all circuits are busy. We will call you." One was fortunate indeed if the call might be completed within six or eight hours.

Not merely hundreds, but thousands, of the unemployed oil field workers from other parts of the country poured into the new oil domain. Hitchhikers, bums riding the blinds, families afoot, weary with their burdens, trekked into Henderson and Overton daily, forced to ask charity when they found no jobs awaiting them. As usual, the news of a new oil field had been spread by wire to newspapers the world over, and this human tide was the response.

Over at the newly completed Henderson court house, planned to meet the needs of Rusk County for many years to come, the records department was struggling with the receipt of hundreds of instruments hourly. Stenographers and typists from Dallas, Shreveport, Houston and other nearby cities quickly found places at the court house copying records, or at the abstractor's offices compiling abstracts. Fabulous wages were offered. Many a girl who had been satisfied in the city with a weekly wage of fifteen dollars found it possible to make as much, or more, in a day. Notaries public pinned badges on their hats and milled through the hotel lobbies, finding ready money on all sides. Fortunately for them, the profession was not crowded, and the fee for acknowledging instruments, added to the charges they made for going out into the country in the performance of their duties, netted them comfortable sums.

In hotel bedrooms, many a deal was closed over a fruit jar of corn whisky, in the oppressive smoke-laden atmosphere, to the accompaniment of complacent snores from other guests occupying the same rooms. Unmindful of the customary paper-thin partitions between the rooms in these hostleries, carousal and business went hand in hand; the boom was on; even the bootleggers were able to get in on this new prosperity.²⁰

Henderson was not the only locality in Rusk County to share in the boom. Oil at Overton brought in a boom there too, and soon towns of Joinerville, Carlisle, New London, and Turnertown sprang up.

The oil field, covering a portion of northwestern Rusk

²⁰ Harry Harter, *East Texas Oil Parade*, 79-92.

County, was soon to spread to Gregg, Smith, Upshur, and Cherokee counties. In December of 1930, just across the county line in Gregg County (till 1874 a part of Rusk County) the Ed W. Bateman well on the Lou Della Crim farm opened a rush to the little town of Kilgore. In the adjoining Smith County, Guy Lewis drilled in the Cook No. 1, and in Upshur County in May of 1931, another well was brought in.²¹ The boom picture in other localities was similar to what had taken place in Henderson,²² and the history of Rusk County oil for the next twenty years was tied up with that of what became the East Texas Oil Field.

The opening of the East Texas Oil Field brought a large overproduction of oil and a rapid sinking of the price. So large was the field that it upset the whole structure of supply and demand of oil throughout the country.²³ When the Bradford No. 3 was discovered by Joiner in October, 1930, high-grade oil was bringing \$1.10 a barrel; but early the next year the new field's expansion and overproduction drove the price down to twenty-five cents.²⁴ After private attempts to prorate production were made without success,²⁵ Governor Ross S. Sterling on August 17, 1931, ordered troops of the Texas National Guard, under General Jacob Wolters to shut in all wells and to maintain order. The order read:

Whereas, Section 39 A, Article 16, of the Constitution of the State of Texas declares that the preservation, conservation, and development of all the natural resources of this State are each and all public rights and duties; and

Whereas, the Legislature in the act effective August 12, 1931, declared the law of Texas to be: 'Neither natural gas nor crude petroleum shall be produced, transported, stored or used in such man-

²¹ Carrie J. Crouch, "The Oil Fields of Texas," *National Republic*, 21.

²² Ruel McDaniel writes in his *Some Ran Hot* (p. 65), "Combine the Gold Rush of California in 1849 with the oil booms of Mexia and Ranger and you have a slight picture of East Texas in the spring of 1931."

²³ Ruel McDaniel, *Some Ran Hot*, 245.

²⁴ Carl Coke Rister, *Oil! Titan of the Southwest*, 317.

²⁵ An excellent account of the development of proration can be found in Robert Henry Seale Eakens, *The Development of Proration in the East Texas Oil Field*, M. A. Thesis, University of Texas, Austin, Texas.

ner or under such conditions as to constitute waste; and

Whereas, crude petroleum, oil and natural gas are natural resources of this State; and

Whereas, from facts presented to me by many responsible citizens, including resolutions adopted at a meeting of producers and royalty owners of East Texas oil field on August 14, 1931, and representations made by a committee of citizens who called upon me and submitted facts as to the conditions that obtained in said East Texas oil field, it is evident that:

There exists an organized and intrenched group of crude petroleum, oil and natural gas producers in said East Texas oil field, covering acres within the counties of Upshur, Rusk, Gregg and Smith, who are in a state of insurrection against the conservation laws of the State relating to the prevention of waste of crude petroleum, oil and natural gas, and are in open rebellion against the efforts of the constituted civil authorities of this State to enforce such laws; and that

As evidenced by a telegram in my hands from the Sheriff of Rusk County, the Sheriffs of the counties in the district defined have not a sufficient force, and under the very nature of our Government could not have a sufficient force, to compel operators and producers of crude petroleum, oil and natural gas to obey said law . . .

And I do hereby declare martial law in said territory (Gregg, Upshur, Rusk and Smith counties), effective at 6 a. m., the seventeenth day of August A. D. 1931; and I hereby direct Brig. Gen. Jacob F. Wolters to assume supreme command of the situation in the territory affected and without delay shut down each and every producing crude oil well or producing wells of natural gas, and to further take such steps as he may deem necessary to enforce and uphold the majesty of the law, subject to the orders of the Governor of Texas and commander in chief of the military forces of this State, as given through the Adjutant General.

In testimony whereof, I have hereunto signed my name officially and caused the seal of the State of Texas to be hereunto affixed at my office at Austin, Texas, this, the sixteenth day of August,

A. D. 1931, at 12 o'clock noon.

(Signed) ROSS S. STERLING,
Governor of Texas
WATT L. SAUNDERS,
Assistant Secretary of State²⁶

The day the order was put into effect General Wolters reported that the field was closed down "100 per cent."²⁷ After a brief shut down the field's proration was put in force by the Texas Railroad Commission, under the authority voted by the Forty-Second Texas Legislature.²⁸

"Hot oil"²⁹ continued to flow in excess of regulation and the price of oil came down to an official low of ten cents a barrel and an actual low of five and six cents in some places.³⁰ For a time Texas Rangers attempted to enforce the regulations of the Texas Railroad Commission. Carl Coke Rister has written the following description of conditions the Railroad Commission faced at the time:

Much "hot oil" was secretly run to small topping and skimming plants, even though there were five or six better refineries in the field. The state collected no gasoline tax on this oil, for the outlaw plants kept no records. Criminals openly defied the law. Every kind of subterfuge was employed—"hot-oil" running, "forged tenders and telegrams, tenders obtained illegally on truck loads of waters, perforated and gateless valves, and lock-stops that flowed when apparently closed, and secret pipe lines and bypasses."

Frequently, Railroad Commission officials were turned away from refineries and installations with shotguns and threats of violence. In one instance, a state gauger found that a steel stairway had been cutdown from a storage tank so that he could not measure its contents; and in another, an investigator located a switch controlling a "hot-oil" pipe line, hidden behind a bathtub in an operator's house.

Such subterfuges made extremely difficult the Commission's work of controlling the East Texas oil field. And the field's vast expanse, covered by many thousands of wells, pipe lines, refineries, and

²⁶ Reports of the Adjutant General of the State of Texas for the Fiscal Year Ending August 31, 1931, and August 31, 1932, pp. 14-16; Dallas Morning News, August 18, 1931,

²⁷ Dallas Morning News, August 18, 1931.

²⁸ General and Special Laws of the State of Texas, Acts of the Forty-Second Legislature, First Called Session, 1931, p. 46.

²⁹ "Hot oil" was the term used for oil produced illegally beyond or over the allowable set for a well. A good account of "hot oil" may be had in Ruel McDaniel's *Some Ran Hot*.

³⁰ Texas Almanac (1950) p. 284.

other installations, only added to its burdens.³¹

Another description of the "hot oil" situation is the following:

From the time of discovery there has been a class wholly against proration and the arrival of rangers and soldiers did not soothe their minds or retard the greediness of some. They simply dodged the law by stealing the oil.

The racket included wholesale bribery, carrying off of oil in trucks from open tanks, stealing it through by-passes, breaking open closed wells, and then bootlegging the oil to refineries. This increased to such an extent that it became one of the greatest menaces in the history of the state. Not only did it rob the land owners and operators but also the state of thousands of dollars in revenue, and it did its part in causing over-production and keeping the price down. . . .

It is estimated that between 30,000 and 100,000 barrels were daily taken before the illegal method was stopped.

Operators had used their individual ingenuity in protecting their interests before the state was aroused. Some had placed guards at their wells; others erected barbed wire network to prevent trucks reaching their wells, and installed various kinds of locks. . . .³²

It was not until the fall of 1933, after Franklin D. Roosevelt issued an executive order establishing a petroleum code under the National Recovery Act, that a semblance of order resulted. After the act became defunct, federal regulation was placed on a basis of interstate commerce.³³

It is interesting to review with statistical data the development of the growth of the oil field in East Texas. The field finished its first full year of development with 3,730 producing wells. The following year, 1932, proved to be the most active year of the great field's development when 5,660 wells were completed, bringing the total at the end of the year to 7,390. The all-time peak of completions for one month was reached in June, 1932, when 658 wells were brought in, or an average for the month of 21.9 wells per day. More than half of the oil wells completed in the United States in 1932 were found in this

³¹ Carl Coke Rister, *Oil! Titan of the Southwest*, 322.

³² Carrie J. Crouch, "The Oil Fields of Texas," *National Republic*, 22.

³³ Carl Coke Rister, *Oil! Titan of the Southwest*, 376.

single field.³⁴

In 1950 the East Texas Oil Field varied from four to eight miles wide, forty-two miles long, and included 110,000 acres. In Rusk County 44,096 acres were located in the field.³⁵ Production figures and number of wells for the East Texas Oil Field during the past twenty years are as follows:

Year	Barrels Produced	Year	No. Wells End of Year
1930 -----	27,000	1930 -----	5
1931 -----	109,561,000	1931 -----	3,612
1932 -----	121,449,000	1932 -----	9,372
1933 -----	204,954,000	1933 -----	11,875
1934 -----	181,540,000	1934 -----	15,576
1935 -----	176,859,000	1935 -----	19,507
1936 -----	167,512,000	1936 -----	21,960
1937 -----	170,673,000	1937 -----	24,369
1938 -----	152,116,000	1938 -----	25,923
1939 -----	144,615,000	1939 -----	25,997
1940 -----	141,023,000	1940 -----	25,921
1941 -----	132,586,000	1941 -----	25,764
1942 -----	121,269,000	1942 -----	25,253
1943 -----	132,113,000	1943 -----	24,552
1944 -----	135,721,000	1944 -----	24,147
1945 -----	131,315,000	1945 -----	23,507
1946 -----	121,080,000	1946 -----	23,055
1947 -----	117,523,000	1947 -----	22,725
1948 -----	113,008,000	1948 -----	22,319
1949 -----	93,593,000	1949 -----	22,217
1950 (through June) 44,984,000		1950 (through June) 22,114 ³⁶	
TOTAL 2,713,491,000			

Rusk County had become wealthy during the twenty years of oil activity. No longer was farming the main source of income, and Henderson was no longer termed a typical "sleepy East Texas town."

In Henderson the population jumped from 2,932 in 1930 to 6,437 in 1940. The population in the county took a jump from 32,484 in 1930, to 51,023 in 1940.³⁷ The **Henderson, Texas, City Directory, 1951-1952**, gave the following information on Henderson and Rusk County through 1950:

³⁴ Statistical Appendix to Minerals Yearbook, 1932-1933, U. S. Bureau of Mines, 335.

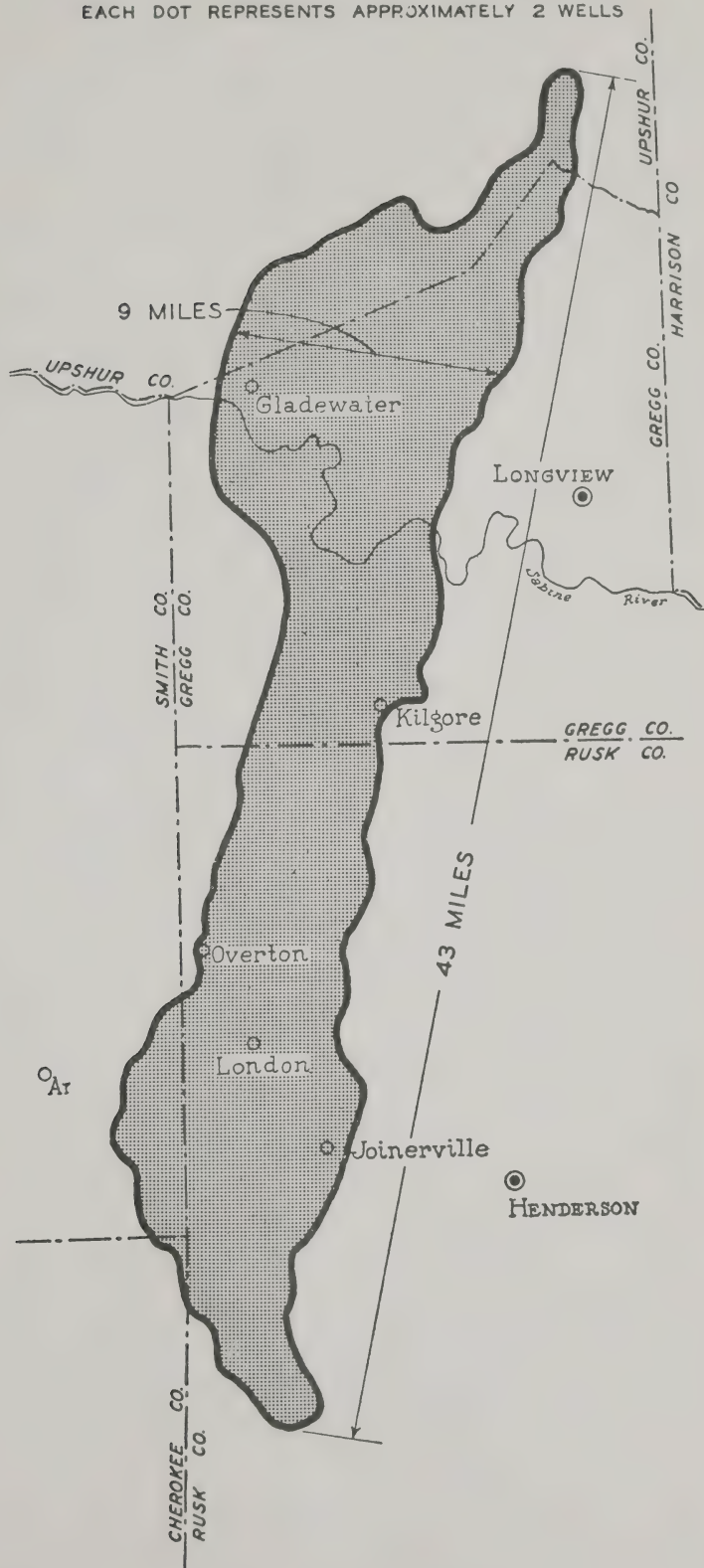
³⁵ Minor and Hanna, "East Texas Oil Field," Bulletin of the American Association of Petroleum Geologists, 757.

³⁶ Records of the Texas Railroad Commission, Kilgore, Texas.

³⁷ Henderson and Rusk County, Texas, 4.

EAST TEXAS OIL FIELD

EACH DOT REPRESENTS APPROXIMATELY 2 WELLS



Population: Greater Henderson	11,232
Rusk County	42,334
Postal Receipts: 1930	\$22,360
1940	\$50,752
1949	\$79,880
Bank Deposits: 1930	\$ 1,251,197
1940	6,813,846
1950	13,188,732

Principal sources of income (1) oil and gas (2) agriculture, dairying, beef cattle, poultry (3) forestry.

With new earnings of \$12,364,000 for the 3,000 families in Henderson, the average was \$4,122 per family in 1948. Retail sales in the county during 1948 aggregated \$26.1 million, an increase of 114 per cent over \$10.7 in 1939. Wholesale sales in the county reached a total of \$6.9 million in 1948 as compared with \$4.4 million in 1939. The service trade recorded receipts totaling \$1.2 million in 1948 compared with \$0.5 million in 1939.

Henderson accounted for retail sales of \$17,-646,000 in 1948. Thus the city did .0135 per cent of the nation's business with but .0064 per cent of the nation's population. It was also ahead on a statewide basis, doing .283 per cent of Texas' business although it has only .128 per cent of the population of the state.

Henderson has a \$450,000 brick plant, airplane manufacturing company, canning plant, tile plant, sawmills, planing mills, and processing plants for the lumbering industry, blouse and lingerie manufacturers, hatchery, and numerous small plants.

Rusk County has approximately 4,000 farms and ranches with an estimated income of \$6,500,000 annually. Principal crops are cotton, corn, tomatoes, watermelons, peas, potatoes, and cover crops. Dairy cattle and beef cattle rank along with agriculture crops in value. There are approximately fifty to sixty grade A dairies in the county. With 75 broiler houses now in the county, an average of 1,500,000 broilers are being produced annually for market.

Nine U. S. and State highways converge at Henderson,³⁸ and there are seven secondary country roads radiating from the city.³⁹

³⁸ There is a beautiful painting by Avery Johnson, "Summer Afternoon," which depicts a roadside park northeast of Henderson on State Highway 43, in *Humble Way*, Vol. VI, Number 2, July-August, 1950, pp. 13-14.

³⁹ Henderson, Texas, *City Directory*, 1951-1952, unpagued.

As a result of the oil discovery, great wealth and prosperity came to Rusk County at a time when most parts of the nation felt the full impact of the Great Depression. In 1936 it was estimated that in Rusk County 15,000 men were engaged in oil production alone, representing a payroll of \$1,500,000 a month. Royalties paid to landowners and their assignees amounted to more than \$1,200,000 a month.⁴⁰

Cotton was no longer King in Rusk County.⁴¹ From 1925, when fifty-five thousand bales of cotton were produced, the figure dropped to a little over six thousand in 1945. By 1950 the county agent for Rusk County reported that "Rusk County had practically gone out of the cotton business."⁴² But Rusk County remained in the oil business, and as late as 1948 was reported as the second-ranking oil producing county in the state.⁴³

⁴⁰ Rusk County, Rusk County Chamber of Commerce publication, unpagged.

⁴¹ Samuel Loyd Neal, *An Analysis of the Farm Test Unit Demonstration Program in Rusk County, Texas*, M. S. Thesis, Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas, College Station, Texas, 58.

⁴² *Ibid.*

⁴³ *Texas Almanac*, 1949-1950, p. 582.

CHAPTER VII

COMMUNITIES AND TOWNS

The following communities, towns, and "ghost towns" were in existence in Rusk County in 1950. The county seat of Henderson is not included in this chapter because its development has been described in detail in previous chapters. Other localities covered in some detail in previous chapters have been given only brief mention here.

BETHEL

Bethel, a farming and stockraising community centering around a church and store, is located approximately five miles south of Henderson.

BRACHFIELD

Brachfield, a farming community located approximately twelve miles southeast of Henderson, was settled in the 1860's. Located near Murvall Creek, the settlement was first called Murvall. Several stores and a gin served a population of approximately seventy-five in 1940.

CALEDONIA

Caledonia, located in extreme southeastern Rusk County, is one of the oldest parts of the county. As early as 1828 land grants were issued to Thomas Williams and William Elliott. In 1950 Caledonia had a store and population of approximately twenty-five.

CARLISLE

see Price.

CHALK HILL

Chalk Hill, settled about 1875, is a farming community in the northeastern part of the county.

CHAPMAN

Chapman, located eight miles east of Henderson, is sometimes known as Blossom Hill. It was named for the John Chapman family, one of whose members, Henry Chapman, fought in the battle of San Jacinto. The community had four businesses and a population of 150 in 1940.

CHURCH HILL

Church Hill, a community nine miles northeast of Hen-

derson, grew up in the early fifties when settlers from Georgia settled there and atop a high pine-covered hill built the church which gave the town its name. Plantations were established nearby, and a planter from Virginia, a Dr. Prior, is said to have built the first brick residence in the county there. The Presbyterian Church operated the Church Hill Male and Female Academy in the 1850's. In 1940 the community had two stores and a population of thirty.

COMPTON

Compton is a farming community about eight miles southwest of Henderson.

CONCORD

Concord, a dairying and farming community, is located in the southeastern part of the county. Situated in the oldest part of the county, the community had four businesses, a school, and a population of 125 in 1940.

CRAIG

Craig is a farming community six miles north of Henderson.

CRIMS CHAPEL

Crims Chapel, a farming community, is located nine miles north of Henderson. Ground for an early church here was given by J. W. Crim.

CROSS ROADS

Cross Roads is a farming community in northern Rusk County near the Gregg County line.

DIRGIN

Dirgin is a farming community approximately fifteen miles northeast of Henderson.

EASTON

Easton, first known as Walling's Ferry and then as Camden, is located in the northeastern part of the county on the Sabine River. The vicinity had been settled in the 1830's, and for many years the ferry was run by the Walling family, one of whose members, Jesse Walling, fought in the battle of San Jacinto.¹ The town had one of the earliest telegraph lines in the state (1854).²

¹ Virginia Smith, "Camden, Old Ghost Town on the Sabine," *Junior Historian*, III, Number 6, p. 14.

² *Ibid*,

After the Civil War the town began to decline when Shreveport, rather than Jefferson, became the market for most of Rusk County's products.³ In 1885 the Santa Fe Railroad built a line through the town. In 1940 Easton was a Negro community with one business and a population of fifty.

FLANAGAN

Flanagan, located in northeastern Rusk County and named for Webster Flanagan, was established in 1882 as a station on the Longview and Sabine Valley Railroad (later a part of the Gulf, Colorado, and Santa Fe). In 1900 it was a lumber shipping point with a post office and population of fifty. In 1950 it was predominantly a Negro community.

GLENFAWN

Glenfawn, in the southern part of the county, is credited with being named by two persons: by Julien S. Devereux, who had a plantation in the vicinity prior to 1860, and by Ellis Glen, who is said to have killed a fawn in the area. The settlement had a population of approximately 150 in 1940.

GOOD SPRINGS

Good Springs, an agricultural community ten miles southwest of Henderson, had one store and a population of twenty-five in 1940.

HARMONY HILL

Harmony Hill, a Rusk County "ghost town," located about fifteen miles northeast of Henderson, was laid off in the 1840's on land belonging to John W. Kuykendall, a rich planter who owned a thousand-acre plantation.⁴

Situated in the fertile redlands, the town attracted planters and merchants and became an important trade center. Its nearness to Trammell's Trace, the Grand Bluff Road, and the old Wire Road brought in much trade. The town had three main streets. Henderson Street ran east toward Henderson, and Camden Street ran north toward Camden. Kuykendall Street, which ran south, was named for John W. Kuykendall. By 1860 Harmony Hill consisted of eight or ten stores, a small furniture factory, a blacksmith shop, two churches, a Masonic hall and school, and

³ Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagged.

⁴ Julia Gill, "Harmony Hill," *Junior Historian*, II, Number 5, p. 10.

substantial homes built along the three main streets. It also had a race track.⁵

Harmony Hill had the nick-name "Nip 'n' Tuck." According to legend these two words were names of two fox hounds. One day when the hounds were hunting they ran a fox down through the main streets of Harmony Hill. Someone asked the owner of the dogs how the hunt was coming and he answered, "Just Nip 'n' Tuck."⁶

In the seventies and eighties, with the building of the railroads to Tatum and Henderson, Harmony Hill declined. In 1906 many of the buildings were destroyed by a tornado.⁷ In 1950 only a few of the old homes and a well-kept cemetery remained.

JOINERVILLE

Joinerville, seven miles west of Henderson, was known as Cyril before 1930, when C. M. (Dad) Joiner brought in the Daisy Bradford No. 3 oil well. The community, which is practically at the site of a former Cherokee Indian village, was also known for a time as Miller Schoolhouse. The name Joinerville was given during the boom, when the town had a post office, thirty-five businesses, and a population of 1,500. By 1940 the population had dropped to five hundred.

LAIRD HILL

Laird Hill, named for S. S. Laird, is an oil field community near the northern boundary of the county. The town was known as Pistol Hill during the oil boom. In 1940, as a suburb of Kilgore, Gregg County, Laird Hill had a population of approximately five hundred.

LANEVILLE

Laneville, twelve miles southwest of Henderson, grew up in the 1880's, when stores were built at the crossing of narrow roads or lanes which gave the town its name. In 1940, with a population of approximately 170, the community had three churches, lumber mills, two schools, a gin, and several stores.

LAWSONVILLE

Lawsonville, in southeastern Rusk County, was named for Frank Lawson, a lawyer who owned land in the area

⁵ *Ibid.*; Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagcd.

⁶ Julia Gill, "Harmony Hill," *Junior Historian*, II, Number 5, p. 11.

⁷ Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagcd.

before 1880. In 1885 the community had three steam grist and saw mills, three cotton gins, a general store, three churches, and a school. In 1940 the settlement had a population of fifty.

LEVERETT'S CHAPEL

Leverett's Chapel, four miles north of Overton, is an oil field community in northwestern Rusk County. It may have been named for D. B. Leverett and J. D. Leverett who settled there in 1852. One of the largest villages of the Cherokee Indians was located one mile to the southwest of the present settlement.

LIBERTY

Liberty is a farming community approximately ten miles northeast of Henderson.

LONDON

London, also known as Old London, in western Rusk County, was settled about 1890, supposedly by English people who gave the community its name. With the discovery of oil in 1930, the settlement became an oil field supply point with a residential section for oil field workers. In 1940 the population was one thousand.

MILLVILLE

Millville, a Rusk County "ghost town" located nine miles northeast of Henderson, was known as Liberty Hill in the 1840's. Settled sometime in the thirties,⁸ in 1853 the town was formally laid off. After the building of a water mill there by Enoch Hays and Willis Calloway, the settlement was called Millville. The town had a Masonic lodge, tanyard, small furniture and wagon factory, several stores, and the two-story Log House Hotel, which catered to stagecoach passengers and other travelers. On January 26, 1858, the Millville Male and Female Academy, located on land deeded by Jesse Walling, was incorporated.⁹

In the seventies, with the building of railroads to other towns in the county, Millville began to decline. When public highways later by-passed the town, the remaining business houses and school moved to the nearby settlement of Oak Hill.

The first exploration for oil in Rusk County, about 1911, was made at Boggy Branch near Millville. In 1950

⁸ Ibid.

⁹ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, IV, 1250.

only a church and a picturesque cemetery marked the site of Millville.

MINDEN

Minden, a community in the southeastern part of the county, was first settled in 1849 by the Lewis family from Georgia. It was named by H. W. Watson for Minden, Louisiana, his former home.¹⁰

The town has had two locations. In 1860 Old Minden, near the present town, consisted of a school, a store, and a church. It was located on the old stagecoach line which extended from Marshall to Nacogdoches. Nathan Bedford Forrest, noted Confederate general, lived for six years, in the 1850's, three miles north of Old Minden.

By 1880 all of Old Minden was abandoned, and the town in its present location began to grow. In March, 1880, G. I. Watkins opened the Rock Hill Institute.¹¹ The school was enlarged several times, had a library and a string orchestra.

The town has been primarily a lumbering and farming center. Fire on January 8, 1942, destroyed a store, barber shop, post office, and gas station. In 1940 a population of 250 was reported.

MONROE

Monroe, in the northeastern part of the county, was named for Monroe County, Georgia, the home of the early settlers. An agricultural settlement, it had four stores and a population of approximately sixty in 1940.

MOUNT ENTERPRISE

Mount Enterprise, situated in southern Rusk County, was settled by Charlie Vinson and his brother in 1832.¹² It was probably named for the new enterprise the Vinson brothers engaged in, operation of a store, and the fact that the store was near a slight elevation.

Lumbering was an early industry, and a furniture factory was in operation as early as 1850.¹³ Many plantations were in the vicinity of Mount Enterprise before the Civil War.¹⁴

The Mount Enterprise Male and Female College operated from 1851 to 1855. On February 7, 1853, another

¹⁰ Fred I. Massengill, *Texas Towns*, 124; *Henderson Daily News*, November 30, 1938.

¹¹ *Ibid.*

¹² *Mount Enterprise Progress*, April 27, 1936.

¹³ *Henderson Daily News*, November 30, 1938.

¹⁴ Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagged.

school, the Mount Enterprise Male and Female Academy, was established.¹⁵

By 1880 the town had a hotel, three sawmills, two cotton gins, three churches, a school, and a population of 150.¹⁶ In 1894 the Caro Northern Railway Company was chartered, and operated as a logging road sixteen and one-half miles between Mount Enterprise and Caro, Nacogdoches County.¹⁷

The railroad came to a location about one and one-half miles from Mount Enterprise, and the citizens voted to move the town to the railroad. They called this new place the "new Mount Enterprise" and the other the "old Mount Enterprise."¹⁸ The railroad was abandoned in 1934.

Mount Enterprise was incorporated on May 8, 1915, and again on April 25, 1936.¹⁹ In 1940 the town had several businesses, a bank, a newspaper, and a reported population of 622.

NEW LONDON

New London, established in western Rusk County after the discovery of oil, was named for its location near the old settlement of London. On March 18, 1937, the New London Consolidated School had an explosion which took the lives of 294 persons.²⁰ Composed mainly of oil field workers, the community had a population of approximately six hundred in 1940.

NEW PROSPECT

New Prospect is a farming community about four miles northeast of Henderson.

NEW SALEM

New Salem, in the southwestern part of the county, was first settled by Colonel John Pruitt, and named for Oscar Wilson in honor of his old home in Victoria County.²¹ Settlement was rapid in the fifties. The town had the New Salem Academy in 1854, and on August 16, 1856, the town was incorporated.²²

¹⁵ Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, III, 1382.

¹⁶ *Texas Gazetteer and Business Directory*, 1884-1885, II, 419.

¹⁷ S. G. Reed, *A History of the Texas Railroads*, 448.

¹⁸ *Mount Enterprise Progress*, April 27, 1936.

¹⁹ *Ibid.*

²⁰ *Dallas News*, March 19, 1937; Peggy Cole, "New London School Explosion," *Junior Historian*, VIII, Number 6, p. 11.

²¹ Marie Gill, "History of Rusk County," *Junior Historian*, VIII, Number 4, p. 8.

²² Gammel, *Laws of Texas*, IV, 624.

After the Civil War the town declined rapidly. In 1940 the settlement had three businesses and a population of approximately one hundred and eighty.

OAK FLAT

Oak Flat is a farming community about three miles southeast of Laneville in south-central Rusk County.

OAK HILL

Oak Hill, a farming community located ten miles northeast of Henderson, in 1940 had four stores and a population of approximately eighty.

OVERTON

Overton, located in the northwestern part of Rusk County at the junction of two lines of the Missouri-Pacific Railroad, was laid off in 1873, when the railroad was built. The town was named for Frank Overton, an early settler who had extensive holdings in the area and who donated land for the townsite.²³ The population grew when the towns of Rocky Mount and Bellevue were by-passed by the railroad. In 1875 a Baptist church was established, and in 1876 the Hubbard College was founded.

Overton was primarily a farming center and as late as 1930 the population was approximately four hundred. With the discovery of oil in the area in 1930, population and industry grew. Several refineries, iron works, and oil field supply houses employ many workers. In 1940 the town had ninety businesses and a population of over twenty-three hundred. In 1950 the reported population was 2,003. Allison Mayfield, secretary of state under Governor Charles A. Culberson, and Robert Lee Howze, military leader for whom Camp Howze in World War II was named, were born in Overton.

PIRTLE

Pirtle is a farming community approximately ten miles north of Henderson. Known as Bellevue before the Civil War, the locality at one time had a famous race track.

PINEHILL

Pinehill, situated in extreme eastern Rusk County, was first settled by "Uncle" Henderson Hillin in 1844.²⁴ It was named Pinehill for the many pine trees in the area.²⁵

²³ Henderson *Daily News*, November 30, 1938.

²⁴ Betty Duran, "Pinehill," *Junior Historian*, X, Number 4, p. 18.

²⁵ *Ibid.*

The town was early known as "Rake Pocket." It was so named by a person who thought he had been overcharged at a hotel and that it had raked his pockets. Old-timers still go to "Rake Pocket" on Saturday afternoon.

The settlement had a post office by 1857 and was of considerable size by the outbreak of the Civil War. Between 1900 and 1925, the town had achieved prosperity as a lumbering community, and the Timpson and Henderson Railroad (built in 1909) provided an outlet. In 1913 a newspaper, the Pinehill **Times**, was being published. A destructive fire in 1916 destroyed ten of the businesses.²⁶ With the depletion of the timber supply the railroad was abandoned in 1922. Pinehill had another fire in 1937. In 1940 the town had five businesses and a population of approximately two hundred and fifty.

PLEASANT GROVE

Pleasant Grove, an agricultural community approximately twelve miles southwest of Henderson, is familiarly known as "Shake Rag." It became the site of a shallow oil field in 1940.

PONE

Pone, or Short Pone as it is locally known, is an agricultural community six miles southwest of Henderson.

PRICE

Price, also known as Carlisle, is located eight miles west of Henderson. It developed around a rural post office named Price for the J. M. Price family. For a time the settlement's post office was called Carlisle for John Griffin Carlisle. Later the post office was again changed to its original name of Price. In 1940 the town had twenty businesses and a population of approximately seven hundred and fifty. A large school plant and refineries are in the area.

REDLAND

Redland is a farming community in south-central Rusk County about one mile east of Laneville.

REKLAW

Reklaw, located in southwestern Rusk County and partly in Cherokee County, is Walker spelled backwards.²⁷

²⁶ *Ibid.*

²⁷ Marie Gill, "The History of Rusk County, "Junior Historian, VIII, Number 4, p. 9.

A lumbering center before the Civil War, Reklaw lost some of its settlers to the nearby settlement of Iron Mountain in the 1860's and later in 1891. In 1890 Reklaw reported a townsite. In 1940 the community had a school, two churches, and a population of approximately two hundred and fifty.

SEXTON CITY

Sexton City, located about three miles southeast of Overton in northeastern Rusk County, is an oil field settlement named for a pioneer family. In 1940 the locality had one store and a population of approximately seventy. Most of its industry is centered around two large oil refineries.

SHILOH

Shiloh, a farming community in southeastern Rusk County, was settled in the 1840's. The community had two churches in 1950 and is the scene for celebrations on July 4.

STEWART

Stewart is an agricultural community in northeastern Rusk County.

TATUM

Tatum, located in northeastern Rusk County, was first settled in the 1840s' by Albert Tatum, who built his plantation home in the vicinity.

In 1885, when the Santa Fe Railroad built through the area, the town of Tatum was laid off.²⁸ The town grew and a bank was established in 1903. The following year a cyclone hit, destroying a large part of Tatum, and in 1905 a fire destroyed practically all of the north side of the town.²⁹

Tatum, in 1950, was largely a farming, lumbering, and dairying center. It had two schools, four churches, a soap factory, and two blocks of store buildings. The population in 1940 was approximately four hundred and thirty.

²⁸ Much color has been connected with the railroad and Tatum. One story is told that when the train would approach Tatum that the conductor made his rounds through the coaches calling out:

"Tatum, Tatum! Give your heart
to the Lord and keep your hand
on your pocketbook, Tatum!"

Myrtis and Pax Watkins, *In Old Rusk County*, unpagged.

²⁹ Henderson *Daily News*, November 30, 1938.

TURNERTOWN

Turnertown, situated ten miles west of Henderson, is an oil field town named for Horace Turner, a Henderson landowner. In 1940 the town had three churches, oil field supply stores, machine shops, a dozen stores, and a population of approximately three hundred and fifty.

RUSK COUNTY

If you should travel up and down
Beside the trails and fences
Of old Rusk County's neighborhoods,
You'd sometime doubt your senses.

For you will find some names so strange,
And some so well-known too,
Like London, Norfolk, Sulphur Springs—
You'll wonder if it's true.

Baldozie's near Panola's line.
Shiloh and Bunker Hill
Are not just battles—they are here.
Go see them if you will.

There's Possum Trot and Nip and Tuck,
Glen Fawn and Buzzard Roost.
They say that Shake Rag and Short Pone
Want oil to give a boost.

And there's Chicken Feather Road,
It leads out north, you know.
Kilgore's across the county line—
Be careful if you go.

Towiska's cypress trees grow tall.
The creek, Golondrina,
Is willow-arched from bank to bank
On down to Angelina.

These are a few—there's many more,
You'll find them if you care.
These names of streams and little towns
You pass by here and there.

So if you see some funny name
As big as man can paint it
On some signboard—don't be surprised—
It's OUR county, ain't it! ³⁰

³⁰ This poem was written by Miss Myrtis Watkins, Henderson, Texas, and is used with her permission.

In 1950 in Rusk County, Henderson, the county seat, was the largest town and the center for most of the activity in the county. Overton, located in the northwestern part of the county, ranked second in size and importance. Some of the old settlements such as Pinehill and Mount Enterprise were still in existence, but other old settlements such as Walling's Ferry, Harmony Hill, and Millville could almost be considered "ghost towns." New towns in the western part of the county developed during the oil boom have included New London, Price, Joinerville, and Turner-town. For the most part, localities such as Bethel, Brachfield, Concord, Glenfawn, Laneville, Monroe, Oak Flat, and Stewart have been farming centers during most of their existence.

CHAPTER VIII

BIOGRAPHIES

Some historians maintain that history is nothing more than a biography. This may not be strictly true, but certainly it is true that biography is a large and important part of history and that it is hardly possible to write biography without writing history.

The aim of the chapter is to exemplify and perpetuate, in the broader sense, the history of Rusk County through its chief personalities. It attempts, so far as possible, to embrace biographical sketches of those persons prominently connected with the history of the county. In a few instances Rusk Countians gaining fame on the national scene have been included. Statesmen, soldiers, lawyers, doctors, educators, and those who have contributed to the industrial and commercial progress and growth of Rusk County have been included. All persons have been included on a basis of merit. No living persons have been included.

ALEXANDER, ISAAC

Isaac Alexander, son of David B. and Margaret Gilmore Alexander, was born in Lebanon, Virginia, on July 24, 1832.¹ After attending Strawberry Plains High School, he attended Emory and Henry College where he received a B. A. degree in 1854 and an M. A. degree in 1857.

Alexander, licensed to preach in the Methodist Church at Henderson in 1854,² was received on trial into the East Texas Conference at Marshall in 1855. He was ordained deacon at Rusk in 1857, and was ordained elder at Marshall in 1860. He preached at various localities in East Texas and was an agent for Soule University in Washington County.

In 1873 Alexander established Alexander Institute (later Lon Morris College at Jacksonville) in northwestern Rusk County near Kilgore.³ He served as president of the institution until about 1890.

Retiring from the active ministry in 1908, Alexander became associate editor of the **Rusk County News**. For

¹ Mrs. Hattie (Joplin) Roach, *A History of Cherokee County*, 154.

² Macum Phelan, *A History of Early Methodism in Texas*, 377.

³ Homer S. Thrall, *A Brief History of Methodism in Texas*, 276.

a time he served as chaplain and associate professor of the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas. Alexander was married twice and had three daughters. He died at Henderson on June 5, 1919.

ALFORD, JOHN R.

John R. Alford, son of Egbert Benson and Ella Overton Alford, was born at Overton on February 1, 1885. At the age of five he moved with his family to Henderson. He served as a first lieutenant during World War I.

Alford became one of Rusk County's most successful business men. He started as a bookkeeper for the old Farmers and Merchants National Bank and rose to become chairman of the board of the Citizens National Bank, its successor. He was associated with a number of businesses and was highly successful with oil activities. Alford's interests also included breeding and raising registered livestock, dairying, forestry, orchards, and all phases of better agriculture. He played a vital role in the agricultural and economic development of East Texas, as well as Rusk County, and served as president of the Rusk County Chamber of Commerce and the East Texas Chamber of Commerce.

Many East Texas young persons were able to attend college on money borrowed from Alford, and he is credited with the statement that he never lost any money on such loans. He was well known as a Methodist layman and served as a trustee of Southern Methodist University. Alford married Susan Landon and they were parents of three children. He died in Henderson on March 8, 1960.

BARNETT, S. SLADE

S. Slade Barnett probably came to Texas after the Texas Revolution and before December 21, 1839, the date he received a conditional certificate for land in Sabine County. In 1840 he represented Sabine County in the House of the Fifth Congress of the Republic.⁴

Barnett moved to Rusk County and served as county commissioner in 1848, justice of the peace in 1850, and notary public in 1854 and 1858.⁵ The date of his death has not been established.

BARTON, JAMES M.

James M. Barton, son of Benjamin Barton, was born

⁴ Biographical Directory of the Texas Conventions and Congresses, 50.

⁵ Ibid.

in Pickens County, South Carolina. The family came to Texas, and during the Regulator-Moderator War in Harrison County, the father was killed. James M. Barton was married to Emily Miller, and they settled in Millville, in Rusk County. He served as county sheriff for ten or twelve years.⁶

During the Mexican War Barton served under Zachary Taylor. In 1862 Barton raised a company in Rusk County for the Confederate Army and rose to the rank of colonel. He had a mercantile establishment at Belleview, Rusk County; Hallsville, Harrison County; and Longview, Gregg County. For several years Barton lived in retirement at his home near Belleview. At the time of his death in September, 1876, he was sergeant-at-arms of the Texas Senate.⁷

BOGGESS, MILTON M.

Milton M. Boggess, son of Giles Sanford and Sarah Bryant Boggess, was born in Carroll County, Georgia, in 1830, and came to Henderson, Texas, in 1847.⁸

On January 29, 1861, Boggess helped organize a company in Rusk County for the Confederate Army.⁹ He served as captain of the company which became a part of the First Texas Cavalry. After living twenty-four years in Henderson, Boggess moved to Waco. He served as sergeant-at-arms of the Sixteenth, Eighteenth, and Nineteenth legislatures.¹⁰

BOWDON, FRANKLIN WELSH

Franklin Welsh Bowdon was born in Chester District, South Carolina, on February 17, 1817, and graduated from the University of Alabama at Tuscaloosa in the class of 1836. He practiced law at Talladega, was a member of the state house of representatives in 1844 and 1845, and served from 1846 to 1850 as a Democrat from Alabama to the Twenty-ninth Congress.¹¹ Bowdon became known as an outstanding orator, and it was said that Henry Clay had pronounced him "the greatest living orator."¹²

In 1852 Bowdon moved to Henderson and resumed his law practice. His fame as an orator was well known, and

⁶ Frank W. Johnson, *History of Texas and Texans*, IV, 1758.

⁷ *Ibid.*, 1759.

⁸ E. H. Loughery, *Personnel of the Texas State Government*, 65.

⁹ *Henderson Times*, December 29, 1948.

¹⁰ *Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas*, 100, 115, 123.

¹¹ *Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927*,

p. 872.

¹² *See* Johnson, *Biographies of Old Settlers*, 65.

on several occasions he debated the merits and demerits of Know-Nothingism with Sam Houston.¹³ Commenting on a debate he heard at Rusk, Texas, between Bowdon and Houston in the campaign of 1855, Sid S. Johnson wrote:

The Texas orator (Bowdon) swept like a cyclone the structure built by the great Houston in his opening speech, scattered his logic to the four winds, and fairly captured the minds and hearts of the thousands who heard him on that memorable day.¹⁴

Governor Oran M. Roberts on one occasion is reported to have stated that Bowdon was the greatest orator Texas ever had,¹⁵ and John H. Reagan is credited with the statement that Bowdon was the most phenomenal orator he had heard.¹⁶ Much legend and tradition was connected with Bowdon. On one occasion Professor J. C. Miszner, noted graduate of the Leipzig Conservatory, who taught in Henderson, compared a Bowdon speech to "a great symphony orchestra, making me gasp for breath as I listened." Bowdon was said to turn dark in the face when making his best orations.

Bowdon served as presidential elector on the Democratic ticket of James Buchanan and John C. Breckenridge in 1856.¹⁷ He died at Henderson on June 8, 1857, and was buried in the City Cemetery. Bowdon, Georgia, is named in his honor. A college located there until about 1932 was named for Bowdon.

BRINGHURST, WILLIAM L.

William L. Bringhurst, a native of Louisiana, received his education at Tulane University. Coming to Texas he taught at Texas Military Institute and the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas. During the Civil War he rose to the rank of major. On February 28, 1876, in the Governor's Mansion at Austin, Bringhurst married Nettie Power Houston, daughter of Sam Houston.¹⁸

From 1895 to 1897 Bringhurst lived in Henderson and served as president of the Henderson Male and Female College. A son, Sam Houston Bringhurst, died and was

¹³ Dabney White, "Henderson Rich in Legends of Younger Days in Texas," *Frontier Times*, XIII, 55.

¹⁴ Sid S. Johnson, *Texans Who Wore the Gray*, I, 212.

¹⁵ Dabney White, "Henderson Rich in Legends of Younger Days in Texas," *Frontier Times*, XIII, 55.

¹⁶ Sid S. Johnson, *Texans Who Wore the Gray*, I, 212.

¹⁷ *Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927*, p. 872.

¹⁸ *Dallas Morning News*, February 19, 1913.

buried in Henderson.

Bringhurst was appointed by Governor Oscar B. Colquitt to be superintendent of the State Orphans Home in Corsicana. He died in Corsicana on February 18, 1913.¹⁹

BROWN, RICHARD

Richard Brown, son of Dr. William Brown, was born on November 16, 1809, in Philadelphia. After the family moved to Charleston, South Carolina, Brown came to Texas in 1836, and served for six months in the Texas Army.²⁰

After visiting an aunt in North Carolina in 1837, he returned to Texas in 1838, settling in Robertson County. Brown assisted in a survey of Galveston Island and later taught school in Walker County.

In 1842 Brown again volunteered for the Texas Army and remained with the group which joined Colonel W. S. Fisher to take part in the expedition against Mier.²¹ Taken prisoner, he was forced to participate in the black bean drawing. After drawing a white bean he was imprisoned in Perote Castle until his release on September 16, 1844, when he returned to Walker County.²²

Brown moved to Rusk County in 1845, settling near Henderson. He married Nancy Cook in 1849, and they had twelve children. Brown died on August 24, 1893, and was buried at Pine Grove Cemetery, ten miles south of Henderson.

BROWN, ROBERT TAYLOR

Robert Taylor Brown, son of Taylor and Mary (Smith) Brown, was born three miles north of Henderson on February 1, 1873. He attended Rock Hill Institute at Minden and studied law under Judge W. C. Buford. Brown began the practice of law in Henderson in 1894 and held the office of county attorney, county judge, and district judge. After the discovery of the East Texas Oil Field during the 1930's, he became noted for his oil field decisions and disposed of hundreds of cases.

Judge Brown was a recognized authority on Rusk County and Texas history, and he was one of the most familiar figures in Henderson, always walking to and from his courthouse office. He had the unusual record of never

¹⁹ Ibid.

²⁰ Ibid., September 3, 1940.

²¹ Thomas J. Green, *Journal of the Texian Expedition Against Mier*, 438.

²² Betty Duran, "Richard Brown, Survivor of the Mier Expedition," *Junior Historian*, XI, Number 4, p. 22.

having been absent from his office, and he was at his desk in the courthouse at the time of his death on October 24, 1952. Judge Brown was married to Sarah Norvell, and they were the parents of four children.

CHAPMAN, HENRY

Henry Chapman volunteered for service in the Texas Army at Nacogdoches on March 8, 1836, and fought in Captain Hayden Arnold's company at the battle of San Jacinto.²³

Chapman lived in Rusk County for a number of years after receiving a land grant there for services rendered during the Texas Revolution.²⁴ The date of his death has not been established.

The community of Chapman, eight miles east of Henderson, was named for the John Chapman family, one of whose members was Henry Chapman.

COOPER, OSCAR HENRY

Oscar Henry Cooper, son of Dr. William Henry and Katherine Hunt (Rosser) Cooper, was born on November 22, 1852, near Carthage, Panola County, Texas. After attending Marshall University in 1865 and 1866, he entered Yale University at the age of fifteen and received his bachelor of arts degree in 1872.²⁵

After teaching for a time in Panola County, Cooper became president of the Henderson Male and Female College, 1873-1879.²⁶ Two years following this position Cooper taught at the Sam Houston Normal Institute.

Cooper wrote many articles to stimulate interest in the establishment of a state university, and in 1880 he was chairman of a committee of the Texas State Teachers Association which drew up a proposal urging this establishment.²⁷ Cooper was a tutor at Yale in 1881, and he studied at the University of Berlin, 1884-1885. He was state superintendent of public education in Texas from 1886 to 1890, served as president of Baylor University from 1899 to 1902, and served as president of Simmons College from 1902 to 1909. Resigning from Simmons College in July, 1909, he headed Cooper's Boys School at Abilene until February 22, 1915, when he returned to Simmons College as head of

²³ Sam Houston Dixon and Louis Wiltz Kemp, *The Heroes of San Jacinto*, 344.

²⁴ *Ibid.*

²⁵ L. E. Daniell, *Personnel of the Texas State Government*, 29.

²⁶ L. E. Daniell, *Types of Successful Men of Texas*, 594.

²⁷ New York Times, August 23, 1932.

the department of education and philosophy and chairman of the faculty.²⁸ Cooper taught part-time at the University of Texas, was chosen a fellow of the Texas State Historical Association in 1902, and served as president of the Association of Texas Colleges in 1923.²⁹ Cooper married Mary Bryan Stewart, granddaughter of Dr. James H. Starr, on November 24, 1886, and they had four children. He died in Abilene on August 22, 1932.

CUMBY, ROBERT H.

Robert H. Cumby was born on August 24, 1825, in Charlotte County, Virginia, and lived there until he was eleven years old. In 1836 he moved to Lafayette County, Mississippi, and married. In the winter of 1849 he settled in Rusk County, Texas.³⁰

In 1860 Cumby was elected to represent Rusk County in the Eighth Texas Legislature.³¹ In 1861 in Rusk County he organized and served as captain of Company B, Third Texas Cavalry.³²

DEVEREUX, JULIEN SIDNEY

Julien Sidney Devereux, son of John William and Sally (Griggs) Devereux, was born on July 23, 1805, at Montpelier, Hancock County, Georgia. In 1835 he was serving as justice of the peace in Macon County, Alabama, and was enrolled into the federal military service during 1836 and 1837.³³

In 1838, at Houston, Texas, Devereux declared his intention of becoming a citizen of the Republic of Texas, and in 1841 he took up residence in Montgomery County.³⁴ Five years later he moved to Rusk County and established his plantation home, "Monte Verdi."

Devereux became a successful planter and at one time owned approximately 10,000 acres of land and eighty slaves.³⁵ From 1848 to 1851 he served as a justice of the peace in Rusk County. In 1854 he was elected county

²⁸ Daniell, Personnel, 30.

²⁹ New York Times, August 23, 1932.

³⁰ Wm. DeKeyser and R. E. Moore, *The Texas Album of the Eighth Legislature, 1860*, p. 42.

³¹ *Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas*, 34.

³² *Dallas Herald*, June 19, 1861.

³³ Julien S. Devereux Diary for 1849, p. 140, Devereux Papers, in private collection of O. D. Weeks, Austin, Texas; Office of the Adjutant General, Washington, D. C., to D. W., March 22, 1950.

³⁴ B. P. Paddock, *A Twentieth Century History and Biographical Record of North and West Texas*, II, 58.

³⁵ Will of Julien Devereux, Vol. G, 345, Probate Records, Rusk County, Texas, April 27, 1854.

commissioner, and in 1855 he represented Rusk County in the Sixth Legislature.³⁶

Devereux was married twice; first to Adaline Rebecca Bradley and later to Sarah Ann Landrum. He died on May 1, 1856, and was buried near his home of "Monte Verdi."

ECTOR, MATHEW DUNCAN

Mathew Duncan Ector, born in Putnam County, Georgia, February 28, 1822, studied law at Greenville, Georgia, served in the Georgia legislature, and traveled to California before settling in Henderson in 1850.³⁷ He was admitted to the bar to practice law in Henderson in 1851.³⁸ In 1855 he was editor of the Henderson **Democrat**, and during the same year he was elected to represent Rusk County in the Sixth Legislature.³⁹

In 1861 Ector entered the Confederate Army as a private in the 3rd Texas Cavalry, and was soon promoted to adjutant of General Joseph L. Hogg's brigade.⁴⁰ In 1862 he was made colonel and commander of the Fourteenth Texas Regiment, and on August 23, 1862, he was promoted to brigadier general.⁴¹ He served with distinction at Chickamauga and Murfreesboro, and on July 28, 1864, during the fighting at Atlanta, he received a wound which necessitated the amputation of his left leg.⁴²

In 1866 Ector returned to Henderson and resumed his law practice. The same year he was elected district judge but was removed from office as an impediment to reconstruction by General Joseph Jones Reynolds, commander of the Department of Texas.⁴³ For a time Ector lived in Marshall and then in Tyler. He was married three times: to Louise Phillip, to Letitia M. Graham, and to Sallie Pinkerton Chew.

Governor Richard R. Coke in 1874 appointed Ector judge of the Sixth District of Texas, and in 1876 he was appointed the first presiding judge of the Court of Appeals in which office he served until his death at Tyler on Octo-

³⁶ Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas from 1846 to 1939, p. 24.

³⁷ Homer S. Thrall, *Texas Hand-Book and Emigrants Guide*, 171-172.

³⁸ *Biographical Encyclopedia of Texas*, 39.

³⁹ *Members of the Legislature*, 24.

⁴⁰ Sid S. Johnson, *Texans Who Wore the Gray*, 73.

⁴¹ C. A. Evans (ed.), *Confederate Military History*, II, 227-228.

⁴² Z. T. Fulmore, *The History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, 246.

⁴³ *Galveston News*, October 30, 1879.

ber 29, 1879.⁴⁴

Ector County, created in 1874, was named in his honor.⁴⁵

FLANAGAN, JAMES WAINWRIGHT

James Wainwright Flanagan, son of Robert Buck and Anna Bell (Cornelius) Flanagan, was born on October 26, 1872, at Henderson, Texas. He was a nephew of General Webster Flanagan and great-nephew of Senator James Winwright Flanagan.

Leaving Henderson at an early age, Flanagan engaged in railroad work and mining in Cuba, Mexico, and the United States from 1888 to 1912. He became president of the Royal Bank of Canada in 1913, and in 1919 organized the Andean National Corporation to build 615 miles of petroleum pipe line from Cartagena to Barranca Bermeja in Colombia, South America. For this work the government of Colombia erected a monument to Flanagan which was dedicated in ceremonies on August 17, 1949.⁴⁶

In 1896 Flanagan served as lieutenant colonel in the Cuban Army and was awarded the Medal of Military Merit; served on special assignment on the staff of Brigadier General W. W. Gordon in 1898; and held honorary commission as lieutenant colonel in the 1st and 2nd Battalion of the Irish Regiment of Canada in 1940. Flanagan was given many awards and honors by South American and European countries, and in 1926 he was decorated by Pope Pius XI as Commander in the Order of St. Gregory.⁴⁷ He was a member of numerous clubs and organizations, including the Texas State Historical Association and Sons of the Republic of Texas. In 1933 he completed a translation of Theodore Wolf's **Geography and Geology of Ecuador**.

For many years Flanagan lived in Toronto, Canada, and served as vice-president of Standard Oil Company (New Jersey).⁴⁸ In 1946 he retired from public life and moved to Houston, Texas.

Flanagan was married twice: to Panchita G. Love in 1902, and to Hazel B. Brown in 1913. He had two children. Flanagan accumulated a large fortune and had the reputation of being a colorful, cheerful, kind, and generous person. He died in Houston on July 24, 1950.

⁴⁴ *Ibid.*

⁴⁵ Fulmore, *History and Geography of Texas*, 246.

⁴⁶ *Houston Chronicle*, July 25, 1950.

⁴⁷ *Who's Who in America* (1947), 772.

⁴⁸ *Houston Post*, July 25, 1950.

FLANAGAN, JAMES WINWRIGHT

James Winwright Flanagan, son of Charles Flanagan, was born at Gordonsville, Albermarle County, Virginia, on September 5, 1805. He accompanied his parents to Kentucky in 1815 and settled near Boonesboro. At Cloverport, Kentucky, he had a successful merchandise business, dealt in horses, and operated a flotilla of flatboats on the Ohio and Mississippi rivers, transporting the merchandise of his area to New Orleans. For twelve years he served as a justice of the peace, and from 1833 to 1843 he was a member of the circuit court of Breckinridge County, Kentucky.⁴⁹

Flanagan sold his business in Kentucky and settled in Henderson on August 9, 1844. He engaged in law practice, operated a store, farmed, and dealt in land. He was elected to represent Rusk County in the Texas House of Representatives, 1851-1852, and in the Texas Senate, 1855-1856.⁵⁰ While in the legislature he introduced bills to establish the first insane asylum in Texas and to charter the Galveston, Houston, and Henderson Railroad.⁵¹

Flanagan, a friend of Sam Houston, was opposed to secession. During the Civil War he retired to his farm near Henderson, established a tanyard, and furnished under contract large quantities of leather to the Confederate government. Flanagan was prominent during Reconstruction, serving as delegate to the Constitutional Convention of 1866 and being elected lieutenant governor in 1869.⁵² He served as United States Senator from 1870 to 1875; as Senator he served on the committees of education, labor, post offices, and post roads.⁵³ Flanagan was an important figure in Republican circles and was a delegate to the Republican National Conventions in 1872, 1876, and 1880.

Flanagan was married three times: to Polly Miller Moorman, Elizabeth Lane, and Mrs. Elizabeth Ware, and was the father of eleven children. After retirement he lived in Longview, Texas, where he died on September 19, 1887. He was buried beside his first wife in the Flanagan cemetery in Henderson.

⁴⁹ Frank W. Johnson, *A History of Texas and Texans*, IV, 2003; *Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927*, p. 972.

⁵⁰ *Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas*, 14, 22.

⁵¹ Johnson, *Texas and Texans*, IV, 2003.

⁵² *Members of the Legislature*, 59.

⁵³ *Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927*, p. 972.

FLANAGAN, WEBSTER

Webster Flanagan, son of James W. and Polly (Miller) Flanagan, was born in Cloverport, Breckinridge County, Kentucky, on January 9, 1832, and at the age of eleven came with his parents to Henderson.⁵⁴ He attended local private schools, Henderson Male and Female College, and in 1851 at the age of nineteen he was admitted to the bar.⁵⁵

Both Webster Flanagan and his father were opposed to secession, but Webster served in the Confederate Army until discharged because of tuberculosis. Webster and his father took an active part in Texas politics during the Reconstruction era, allying themselves with the moderate wing of the Republican Party. Webster Flanagan served as senator in the Texas Legislature from 1870 to 1875, and was a delegate to the Constitutional Conventions of 1868 and 1875.⁵⁶ From 1897 to 1913 he served as collector of internal revenue, and as a delegate to Republican National Conventions he participated in the nominations of Presidents U. S. Grant, William McKinley, and Theodore Roosevelt. Flanagan and Sam Houston were good friends, and Houston was a frequent visitor in the Flanagan home. Houston made Flanagan a brigadier general in the state militia.⁵⁷

Flanagan was active in the civic affairs of Henderson and helped to promote the building of the Henderson and Overton Railroad. He built the first race track in Rusk County; furnished ground for the holding of the first Rusk County Fair; and brought the first Jersey cattle into Texas, importing them from the Isle of Jersey.⁵⁸

Flanagan was married twice, first to Elizabeth Graham, who died in 1872, and later to Sallie Ware. Known for many years as "The Good General," Flanagan had the reputation of a genial, deeply religious, and courtly man. He died in Henderson on May 5, 1924, and was buried in the Flanagan cemetery.

GAGE, DAVID

David Gage, born in Kentucky, lived for a number of

⁵⁴ Rossiter Johnson, *Twentieth Century Biographical Dictionary of Notable Americans*, IV, unpagued.

⁵⁵ Dorman Winfrey, "General Webster Flanagan," *Junior Historian*, IV, Number 2, p. 5.

⁵⁶ *Members of the Legislature*, 57, 79; William S. Speer, *Encyclopedia of the New West*, I, 406.

⁵⁷ Johnson, *Texas and Texans*, V, 2320.

⁵⁸ *Dictionary of American Biography*, VI, 453; Dorman Winfrey, "General Webster Flanagan," *Junior Historian*, IV, Number 2, p. 6.

years in Alabama before he came to Texas in 1839. After purchasing land in the Leonard Williams league in southern Rusk County, he settled near Mount Enterprise. At one time he organized and was made captain of a company of Minute Men, or Ranging Company, as a protection against the Indians.⁵⁹

In 1844-1845 Gage represented Rusk County in the House of the Ninth Congress of the Republic of Texas, and in July, 1845, he was a delegate to the Annexation Convention.⁶⁰ After annexation he served as senator in the Texas Legislature for 1847-1848, 1849-1850, and 1853-1854.⁶¹ Gage died at Mount Enterprise in 1854.

GARRISON, CALEB JACKSON

Caleb Jackson Garrison, born in Carroll County, Georgia, on May 31, 1827, moved to Rusk County, Texas, in February, 1851. He became a merchant and planter and was admitted to the bar in 1855.⁶² He served as assistant secretary of the Texas Senate in 1854 and clerk of the Rusk County court in 1856. Garrison was a lieutenant in the frontier service in 1856, and he was appointed by Governor H. R. Runnels as superintendent of public works on the Sabine River in 1858.⁶³ In 1862 he raised a company in Rusk County for Civil War service.

Garrison served as representative from Rusk County in the House of the Fifteenth, Sixteenth, and Eighteenth Legislatures between 1875 and 1883, and in the Senate of the Nineteenth and Twentieth Legislatures to 1888. While a member of the Senate he was chairman of the Committee on Insurance, Statistics, and History, and of the Committee on Penitentiaries.⁶⁴

Garrison married Antoinette Devereux in 1856, and was later married to Mrs. Giles Boggess. He died about 1901 and was buried at Jacksonville.

GARRISON, GEORGE PIERCE

George Pierce Garrison, son of Patterson Gillespie and Mary Ann (Curtiss) Garrison, was born on December 19, 1853, at Carrollton, Georgia. He attended Sewanee College, at Winchester, Tennessee, and Carroll Masonic Insti-

⁵⁹ Biographical Directory of the Texas Conventions and Congresses, 1832-1845, p. 86.

⁶⁰ Ibid.

⁶¹ Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas, 4, 9, 17.

⁶² L. E. Daniell, Personnel of the Texas State Government, 76.

⁶³ Legislative Manual for the State of Texas for 1879-1880, p. 253.

⁶⁴ Daniell, Personnel of the Texas State Government, 76.

tute, at Carrollton, Georgia. In 1874 Garrison settled with his parents in Rusk County, where he taught school for five years.⁶⁵

After attending the University of Edinburg from 1879 to 1881, Garrison received a Ph.D degree from the University of Chicago in 1896; and in 1910 Baylor University conferred upon him the degree of LL.D. After his return from Scotland he taught for a time in San Marcos, and in 1884 he was appointed instructor in English literature and history in the University of Texas. Garrison became head of the history department in 1889, when English and history were separated.⁶⁶

Garrison was author of a number of articles and books, including the following: **Government of the People of the State of Texas** (1899), **Southwestern History in the Southwest** (1902), and **Texas, A Contest of Civilization** (1903). With the help of others in 1897 he founded the Texas State Historical Association and edited the **Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association** until his death.⁶⁷ He was married to Annie Perkins of Rusk County, in November, 1881, and they were parents of four daughters. Garrison died on July 3, 1910.

Garrison Hall on the campus of the University of Texas is named in his honor.

GATHRIGHT, THOMAS S.

Thomas S. Gathright was born in Georgia, on January 5, 1829. He became a major during the Civil War, was a Royal Arch Mason in 1862, and served for several years as superintendent of public instruction for Mississippi.⁶⁸

Gathright, upon the recommendation of Jefferson Davis, became the first president of the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas and served until 1879.⁶⁹ He was the second president of the Henderson Male and Female College. Gathright died on May 24, 1880, and was buried in the City Cemetery in Henderson.⁷⁰

GRAHAM, MALCOLM D.

Malcolm D. Graham was practicing law in Henderson

⁶⁵ Sam Houston Dixon, *Poets and Poetry of Texas*, 77.

⁶⁶ H. Y. Benedict, "George Pierce Garrison," *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*, XIV, 174.

⁶⁷ *Ibid.*

⁶⁸ *Henderson Times*, November 8, 1937.

⁶⁹ Ellis A. Davis and Edwin R. Grobe, *New Encyclopedia of Texas*, III, 1946; David Brooks Cofer, *First Five Administrators of Texas A. and M. College*, 7.

⁷⁰ *Henderson Times*, November 8, 1937.

as early as 1856, and was one of the incorporators of the Henderson Female College that year.⁷¹ Serving as attorney general of Texas from 1858 until 1860, he represented Texas in the House of the Confederate Congress, serving first as a member of the Committee on Ways and Means and later, in February, 1864, as a member of a committee to establish a bureau of foreign supplies.⁷²

Graham was appointed by Jefferson Davis in May, 1864, as presiding judge advocate, with the rank of colonel, of the Trans-Mississippi Department.⁷³ After being taken prisoner by Union forces, Graham was held on Johnson's Island until his release in March, 1865. He returned to Henderson in September, 1865, and resumed his law practice.⁷⁴

HAMILTON, ANDREW

Andrew Hamilton, son of John and Malvina (Brown) Hamilton, was born in South Carolina on March 2, 1794. During the War of 1812 Hamilton served as a captain of a company of infantry. On December 15, 1814, he married Delilah Smith, sister of General James Smith, for whom Smith County, Texas, was later named.

In 1836 Andrew Hamilton, his wife and nine children, the wife and children of General James Smith, along with other families, came to Texas from Lincoln County, Tennessee. The family first settled in Nacogdoches County and later moved to Rusk County. Hamilton was a ruling elder of the Henderson Cumberland Presbyterian Church from 1845 until his death on February 18, 1859. Hamilton and his wife are buried in the Pleasant Hill Cemetery near Overton.

HARRIS, DICK RANDOLPH

Dick Randolph Harris, son of Jobe Western Harris and Fredonia Adiline (Myrick) Harris, was born in Henderson on October 1, 1871. At the age of eleven Harris went into the print shop of the **Rusk County News** as a printer's devil. In 1890, at the age of nineteen, he became editor and business manager of the **News**, and in 1892 he acquired the paper. Most of his life was identified with newspaper work.

In 1914, after a petition for him to serve was signed

⁷¹ Henderson **Democrat**, November 29, 1856.

⁷² **Journal of the Confederate Congress**, III, 799.

⁷³ *Ibid.*, IV, 27.

⁷⁴ Dallas **Herald**, September 9, 1865.

by all qualified voters, Harris became mayor of Henderson. He advocated the beautification of Henderson during the ten years he held office and during the decade the first street lights were installed; the first pavement and first concrete sidewalks were laid; the first fire department was established (by private subscription); and a system of water works was completed.

After oil was discovered in Rusk County Harris felt a daily newspaper was needed, and with his brother Walter and George Bowman he established the Henderson **Daily News** on March 20, 1931. Harris was known as the "Dean of East Texas Publishers" and served in 1914 as president of the Texas Press Association.

Harris was a Mason, and for almost half a century he was a member of the board of stewards of the First Methodist Church. He was married to Anna Laura Camp and they were parents of two children. Regarded as one of Henderson's most benevolent citizens, Harris was affectionately known as "Uncle Dick." He died in Henderson on December 6, 1949, and on the day of his funeral flags were flown at half-staff and business houses were closed in tribute.

HENDERSON, JAMES PINCKNEY

James Pinckney Henderson, son of Lawson and Elizabeth (Carruth) Henderson, was born in Lincolnton, North Carolina, on March 31, 1808. After attending Lincoln Academy, he attended the University of North Carolina, and was admitted to the bar in 1829.⁷⁵

After serving for a time in the militia of North Carolina, Henderson moved in 1835 to Canton, Mississippi. He became interested in the Texas Revolution and secured enlistments for the Texas service. Arriving at Velasco, Texas, on June 3, 1836, he was commissioned by David G. Burnet as brigadier general and sent to the United States to recruit help for the Texas Army. In North Carolina Henderson organized a company and sent it to Texas, reputedly at his own expense.⁷⁶ After his return to Texas in November, 1836, he was appointed attorney general, and the following month he succeeded Stephen F. Austin as secretary of state.

Henderson served as minister to France and to Eng-

⁷⁵ Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927, p. 1086.

⁷⁶ F. B. Sexton, "J. Pinckney Henderson," *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*, I, 190.

land in 1837,⁷⁷ and while in this capacity at London in October, 1839, he married Frances Cox of Philadelphia. He was a member of the Annexation Convention of 1845, and in November was elected first governor of the state of Texas.⁷⁸ During the Mexican War Henderson took personal command of the 2nd Texas Regiment at the battle of Monterrey. He was appointed major general in the United States Army.⁷⁹ After the death of Thomas Jefferson Rusk, Henderson was elected United States Senator and served from November 9, 1857, until his own death on June 4, 1858.⁸⁰

Henderson County, created in 1846, was named in his honor. The town of Henderson, Rusk County, was named for him at the request of his friend, William B. Ochiltree.⁸¹

HOLLINGSWORTH, ORLANDO NEWTON

Orlando Newton Hollingsworth, son of Benjamin and Joycie (Jones) Hollingsworth, was born in Calhoun County, Alabama, on April 5, 1836, and moved with his family to Rusk County in December, 1845.⁸² He graduated from the University of Virginia in 1859, and in 1861 enlisted as a private in R. H. Cumby's Company B, 3rd Texas Cavalry. In 1861 he raised a company in Rusk County for Civil War service. He became adjutant and after being wounded at the battle of Corinth in 1862, was transferred to the Topographical Corps.⁸³

Following the Civil War Hollingsworth taught at a private academy in San Antonio until he founded Coronal Institute at San Marcos in 1868.⁸⁴ He was admitted to the bar and was elected to the Thirteenth Legislature in 1872.⁸⁵ In December, 1872, he became superintendent of public instruction, and from 1876 to 1884 he served as secretary of the State Board of Education. He established the **Texas Journal of Education** in 1880, and sold it two years later.⁸⁶ Hollingsworth disappeared from public life

⁷⁷ *Biographical Directory of the Texas Convention and Congresses, 1832-1845*, p. 100.

⁷⁸ *Ibid.*

⁷⁹ *Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927*, p. 1086.

⁸⁰ *Ibid.*

⁸¹ Records, 1844, Rusk County, 24, M.S. County Clerk's Office, Henderson, Texas.

⁸² *Encyclopedia of the New West*, 190.

⁸³ *Biographical Encyclopedia of Texas*, 190.

⁸⁴ *Ibid.*

⁸⁵ *Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas*, 73.

⁸⁶ S. S. Johnson, *Texans Who Wore the Gray*, 134.

after serving as a receiving clerk in the General Land Office.

JOINER, COLUMBUS MARION

Columbus Marion (Dad) Joiner, son of James and Lucy Joiner, was born near Center Star, Lauderdale County, Alabama, on March 12, 1860. He began a law practice in Tennessee in 1883, and was a member of the legislature of that state from 1889-1891.⁸⁷ He moved to Oklahoma in 1897 and made and lost two fortunes in oil. By a narrow margin he failed in drilling in the Seminole Field.⁸⁸

Joiner came to Texas in 1926, and engaged in "wild-catting." Despite the contrary opinion of geologists, he was convinced of the possibility of oil deposits in Rusk County. In 1928 he drilled eight miles west of Henderson, using a flimsy pine rig and battered tools. The first wells Joiner drilled were unsuccessful, and he and his associates went further in debt, but the third well, the Daisy Bradford Number 3, came in on October 3, 1930.⁸⁹ With this discovery Joiner became the father of the East Texas Oil Field and was given the nickname "Dad."

Joiner accumulated a large fortune, became involved in several lawsuits, and after 1940 lived in retirement in Dallas.⁹⁰ He married twice, the second time to Dea Eng-land, on September 8, 1933. Joiner died in Dallas on March 27, 1947.

The town of Joinerville in Rusk County was named for him.

JONES, JAMES HENRY

James Henry Jones, born in Shelby County, Alabama, on September 30, 1830, moved at an early age with his family to Talladega County, Alabama. He received an academic education, studied law, was admitted to the bar, and began his law practice in Henderson.⁹¹

Jones enlisted in the Confederate Army and served as captain, lieutenant colonel, and colonel of the 11th Texas Infantry. He was wounded in the battle of Mansfield.⁹²

In 1880 Jones was a presidential elector of the Democratic ticket. In the Forty-eighth and Forty-ninth Con-

⁸⁷ T. C. Richardson, *East Texas*, IV, 297.

⁸⁸ *Ibid.*; Carl Coke Rister, *Oil! Titan of the Southwest*, 308.

⁸⁹ *Dallas Morning News*, October 4, 1930; Harry Harter, *East Texas Oil Parade*, 208-211.

⁹⁰ *Dallas Morning News*, March 29, 1947.

⁹¹ *Biographical Directory of the American Congress*, 1162.

⁹² *Henderson Times*, October 14, 1948.

gresses, March 4, 1883, to March 3, 1887, Jones represented Texas.⁹³ After serving as representative he resumed his law practice in Henderson. He received an appointment on the Board of Regents of the University of Texas by Governor Oran Milo Roberts. Jones was married to Eliza Hall in 1860, and they had eleven children. He died in Henderson on March 22, 1904, and was buried in the New City Cemetery.

KILGORE, CONSTANTINE BUCKLEY

Constantine Buckley Kilgore, born in Newnan, Coweta County, Georgia, on February 20, 1835, came to Rusk County with his parents in 1846. He attended Fowler Institute in Henderson for one year, clerked for Timothy Pillsbury, and, after one year's study of law was admitted to the bar.⁹⁴

Kilgore was opposed to secession but volunteered as a private in the 10th Texas Cavalry. He later became adjutant of Ector's brigade and was wounded at the battle of Chickamauga. He was kept prisoner in Fort Delaware from 1864 to March, 1865. Following his release he resumed his Rusk County law practice.⁹⁵ In 1869 he served as justice of the peace in Rusk County and was a delegate to the Constitutional Convention of 1875.⁹⁶

In 1877 Kilgore moved to Wills Point. He served as a Democratic elector on the Hancock and English ticket in 1880, and in 1884 he represented the Seventh District in the Texas Senate and was elected president pro-tempore of that body.⁹⁷

Resigning from the Texas Senate in 1886, Kilgore represented the Third District in the U. S. Congress from March 4, 1887, to March 3, 1895.⁹⁸ President Grover Cleveland appointed him judge of the Indian Territory on March 20, 1895. He married Fannie Barnett in 1858. A Presbyterian and a Mason, Kilgore died in Ardmore, Indian Territory, on September 23, 1897, and was buried in the White Rose Cemetery, Wills Point, Texas.⁹⁹

The town of Kilgore, Gregg County, was named in his honor.

⁹³ *Biographical Directory*, 1162.

⁹⁴ *Biographical Souvenir of the State of Texas*, 486.

⁹⁵ S. S. Johnson, *Texans Who Wore the Gray*, 159.

⁹⁶ L. E. Daniell, *Personnel of the Texas State Government*, 166.

⁹⁷ *Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas*, 118.

⁹⁸ *Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927*, p. 1181.

⁹⁹ *Ibid.*

MILES, ALBERT BALDWIN

Albert Baldwin Miles, son of Benjamin Franklin and Sarah Albertine Miles, was born in Prattville, Alabama, on May 18, 1852. About 1857 the family moved to Law-sonville, Rusk County, trying to find a climate suitable for the father's health. After the death of the parents in 1864 and 1865, Miles lived with an uncle, John B. Tatum, who later sent him to Gordon Institute in Arkansas and to the University of Virginia.¹⁰⁰

In 1872 Miles entered the medical department of the University of Louisiana, now Tulane University. After graduating in 1875 as valedictorian of his class, he remained in New Orleans, where he successively held the posts of Demonstrator of Anatomy, Professor of Materia Medica and Therapeutics, Professor of Surgery at the University of Louisiana, and Acting Physician at Hotel Dieu, and House Surgeon at Charity Hospital.¹⁰¹

Miles made many contributions to the medical world and to Tulane University in particular. He had a notable reputation in treating gunshot wounds and was the author of a number of articles on the treatment of these cases. Dr. J. E. Watkins, resident of Henderson, who was a student in Dr. Miles' classes at Tulane, has said:

One of his many successful operations for gunshot wounds was the removal of a one-ounce minie ball from the hip of an ex-Confederate veteran, who had been wounded at Gettysburg. He had been crippled for twenty-two years, repeated operations by other surgeons having failed.¹⁰²

Active in the affairs of the Louisiana Medical Society, Miles was president of the body when the Louisiana Legislature finally passed the Medical Practice Bill.¹⁰³ He is credited with being responsible for founding the Charity Hospital Training School for Nurses and was first dean of its faculty. He planned the ambulance system and worked out plans for the building of outdoor clinic buildings.

On August 5, 1894, at the age of forty-two years, Miles died of typhoid in New Orleans. At the time of his death he was considered one of the greatest surgeons in the

¹⁰⁰ New Orleans Medical and Surgical Journal, XXII, July, 1894, p. 321.

¹⁰¹ *Ibid.*, 323

¹⁰² Dorman Winfrey, "Dr. Albert Baldwin Miles," New Orleans Medical and Surgical Journal, Vol. CIII, Number 9, March, 1951, p. 398.

¹⁰³ New Orleans Medical and Surgical Journal (An Editorial), September, 1894, XXII.

South, and he was called "New Orleans' most universally loved citizen."¹⁰⁴ According to the New Orleans **Daily Picayune**, August 8, 1894, several thousand persons, including the governor of Louisiana and numerous high dignitaries, attended the funeral. A front page account of the funeral was carried beneath the headlines:

Dr. Albert B. Miles Passes From This Earth
And the South Mourns the Sudden Closing of
The Career of One of Its Most Brilliant Surgeons
The Noble Life and the Touching Taking Away of
The Beloved Head of the Charity Hospital Staff,
and the Exemplary Citizen.¹⁰⁵

Miles never married. In his will he provided for an endowment to Tulane University, and the Miles Amphitheatre there was named in his honor. At his request he was buried in the family burial plot at Lawsonville, Rusk County.

MILNER, ROBERT TEAGUE

Robert Teague Milner, son of Arnold and Mary Milner, was born on June 21, 1851, in Cherokee County, Alabama.¹⁰⁶ While he was a child, the family moved to Texas and settled seven miles east of Henderson. He attended school at Pinehill and the Henderson Male and Female College. For fifteen years he taught school, but in 1881 he purchased the Henderson **Times**, which he edited almost twenty-five years.¹⁰⁷ Milner was elected to the House of Representatives for the Twentieth, Twenty-first, and Twenty-second Legislatures, 1887-1892.¹⁰⁸ He was chairman of the Committee on Education and was the author of the law requiring the teaching of Texas history in the public schools.¹⁰⁹ In 1907 Milner was appointed state commissioner of agriculture, insurance, statistics and history. While he was serving in that capacity, the legislature passed the law creating the office of commissioner of agriculture, a bill which Milner wrote at the request of Governor T. M. Campbell. Milner became the first commissioner and organized the Department of Agriculture, but resigned in 1908 to become president of the Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas.¹¹⁰ During his administration the college

¹⁰⁴ *Ibid.*, 325.

¹⁰⁵ New Orleans **Daily Picayune**, August 6, 1894.

¹⁰⁶ L. E. Daniell, *Personnel of the Texas State Government*, 156.

¹⁰⁷ Clarence R. Wharton, *Texas Under Many Flags*, V, 46.

¹⁰⁸ *Members of the Legislature*, 129, 137, 143.

¹⁰⁹ Frank W. Johnson, *A History of Texas and Texans*, III, 1392.

¹¹⁰ Rosalind Langston, "The Life of Colonel R. T. Milner," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, XLV, 45.

was divided into the schools of engineering and agriculture. He resigned the presidency in June, 1913, and returned to private life at Henderson. Milner married Mary L. Hawkins in October, 1883, and was the father of five children. He died on July 30, 1923, and was buried in the Old Cemetery at Henderson.

MORRIS, WILLIAM WRIGHT

William Wright Morris was born in Halifax, North Carolina, in 1805, and in 1840 he emigrated to Alabama, where he taught school and studied law.

In 1847, Morris, a bachelor, came to Henderson, accompanied by a widowed mother, a widowed sister and her three children, two younger brothers and their families, his overseer and several slaves.¹¹¹

Morris became district judge in 1854, and in 1859 he was appointed to represent Rusk County in the Eighth Legislature to fill the unexpired term of John N. McClarty.¹¹² He devoted much time to the promotion of railroads in East Texas and was particularly interested in the development of Rusk County resources. Clay discovered on his land three miles north of Henderson was used in making pottery and bricks.

Morris died at his plantation home, built in 1849, on June 3, 1883, and was buried in the Henderson City Cemetery.¹¹³ A large statue personifying "justice," made in Italy, marks his grave. Morris County, created in 1875, was named in his honor.¹¹⁴

OCHILTREE, WILLIAM BECK

William Beck Ochiltree was born on October 18, 1811, at Fayetteville, North Carolina. For a time he lived in Florida, began a law practice in Alabama, and moved to Nacogdoches in 1839.¹¹⁵ In 1843 he moved to Henderson, and on November 3 of that year he donated a part of the land for the townsite.¹¹⁶ He was worshipful master of Clinton Masonic lodge in Henderson.

Ochiltree practiced law and served as judge of the

¹¹¹ Mrs. Ned B. Morris, "Judge William Wright Morris: A Pioneer Homemaker, *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, L, 396.

¹¹² *Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas*, 35.

¹¹³ Z. T. Fulmore, *The History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*, 236.

¹¹⁴ *Ibid.*

¹¹⁵ *Biographical Directory of the Texas Conventions and Congresses*, 143.

¹¹⁶ G. L. Crocket, *Two Centuries in East Texas*, 243; *Henderson Daily News*, March 10, 1932.

Fifth Judicial District, secretary of the treasury in 1844, adjutant general in 1845, delegate to the Annexation Convention in 1845, representative in the Sixth Legislature in 1855, and delegate to the Secession Convention in 1861.¹¹⁷ He served as a delegate to the Provisional Congress of the Confederate States but resigned to return to Texas and raise a regiment.¹¹⁸ For a time he served as a commander in Walker's Division until failing health forced his resignation in 1863. Ochiltree lived in Marshall several years and died at Jefferson on December 27, 1867.

Ochiltree County, created in 1876, was named in his honor.¹¹⁹

PILLSBURY, TIMOTHY

Timothy Pillsbury, born in Newburyport, Massachusetts, on April 12, 1780, moved to Maine and served as a representative in the Maine Legislature and as a member of the Executive Council of that state.¹²⁰

Moving first to Ohio, then to New Orleans, Pillsbury settled in Brazoria County, Texas, in 1837, and engaged in farming. He represented Brazoria County in the House of the Fifth Congress of the Republic of Texas and in the Senate of the Sixth Congress.¹²¹ After serving as chief justice of Brazoria, in 1844, he returned to the Senate in the Ninth Congress.

Pillsbury was elected by the Texas Legislature on March 30, 1846, to the United States Senate, where he served until March 13, 1849.¹²² He died in Henderson on November 23, 1858, and was buried in the Henderson City Cemetery.

REDWINE, H. D. E.

H. D. E. Redwine was born in Georgia, on May 18, 1809, and emigrated to Mississippi in 1828. In 1835 and 1838 he was elected sheriff of Newton County, Mississippi, and in 1841 served as a representative from Lafayette County to the state legislature. Coming to Hays County, Texas, in the fall of 1851, Redwine took up permanent residence in Rusk County the following year.¹²³

¹¹⁷ *Biographical Directory*, 143.

¹¹⁸ Sid S. Johnson, *Texans Who Wore the Gray*, 56.

¹¹⁹ Fulmore, *History and Geography of Texas*, 203.

¹²⁰ *Biographical Directory of the American Congress*, 1413.

¹²¹ E. W. Winkler (comp.), *Secret Journals of the Senate of the Republic of Texas*, 202.

¹²² *Biographical Directory of the American Congress*, 1413.

¹²³ Wm. DeReyee and R. E. Moore, *The Texas Album of the Eighth Legislature*, 159.

Redwine was elected chief justice of Rusk County in 1857, and in 1859 he represented the county in the state legislature.¹²⁴ In 1861 he raised a company of men in Rusk County for the Confederate Army. Sometime after 1874 he joined Webster Flanagan in building the Henderson and Overton Railroad. Redwine was married to Victoria Antoinette Cameron on October 10, 1859, and died on July 21, 1881.

RUSK, THOMAS JEFFERSON

Thomas Jefferson Rusk, son of John and Mary (Sterritt) Rusk, was born in Pendleton District, South Carolina, on December 5, 1803. Encouraged by John C. Calhoun to study law, he was admitted to the bar and began a law practice at Clarksville, Georgia, in 1825.¹²⁵ After coming to Texas in 1834 in search of some miners and land speculators who absconded with his money, Rusk decided to settle near Nacogdoches.

Rusk was a delegate to the Convention of 1836, and signed the Texas Declaration of Independence.¹²⁶ The convention elected him secretary of war on March 18, 1836, and he participated in the battle of San Jacinto.¹²⁷ He served as brigadier general in command of the Texas Army from May 4 to October 31, 1836.

Rusk served from September 25, 1837, to May 24, 1838, in the Second Congress of the Republic. He was in command of the Texas troops which defeated the Cherokee Indians during 1839 at the battle of the Neches.¹²⁸ Rusk was president of the Constitutional Convention of 1845 and favored the annexation of Texas. He was elected to the United States Senate and took office on February 21, 1846.¹²⁹ In a special session of the Senate, March 14, 1857, he was elected president pro-tempore of that body.

Rusk was married to Mary F. Cleveland in 1827, and after her death on April 23, 1856, he became despondent. He committed suicide at his home in Nacogdoches on July 29, 1857, while still holding the office of senator.

¹²⁴ Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas, 35.

¹²⁵ Biographical Directory of the Texan Conventions and Congresses, 1832-1845, p. 165.

¹²⁶ L. W. Kemp, Signers of the Texas Declaration of Independence, 312.

¹²⁷ Sam Houston Dixon and Louis Wiltz Kemp, Heroes of San Jacinto, 38.

¹²⁸ John H. Reagan, "The Expulsion of the Cherokees from East Texas," Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association, I, 43.

¹²⁹ Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927, p. 1485.

Rusk County, created in 1843, was named for Thomas Jefferson Rusk,¹³⁰ as well as the town of Rusk in Cherokee County.

SMITH, GENERAL JAMES

James Smith, son of Henry and Rachel (Clark) Smith, was born in Spartanburg County, South Carolina, on September 10, 1792. After the family moved to Lincoln County, Tennessee, Smith volunteered for service in the War of 1812, and served under General Andrew Jackson in the battle of New Orleans.¹³¹ Returning to South Carolina after the war, Smith was married to Hannah Parker in 1816. They later had ten children. After settling in Lincoln County, Tennessee, in 1819, they moved to Texas in 1835, locating in Nacogdoches County, where Smith operated an extensive plantation.

Early in 1836 Smith returned to Tennessee and organized a troop of cavalry at his own expense to serve in the Texas Revolution, was chosen captain, and served until November, 1836, rising to the rank of colonel.¹³² For services rendered during the Texas Revolution, he received a tract of land in what is now Rusk County at the present townsite of Henderson.

In 1841 Smith was commissioned brigadier general and made a commander of a part of the Texas Army, guarding what was known as the Northwest Frontier. Called into military service again in 1844, he was commissioned by General Sam Houston to raise and command troops to put down the Regulator-Moderator War in Shelby County.¹³³

When Rusk County was created in 1843, Smith, who had settled on the site of Henderson in 1836, offered to donate sixty-nine acres of land for the proposed county seat.¹³⁴ He represented Rusk County in the Texas House of Representatives from February 16, 1846, to December 13, 1847.¹³⁵

Smith died at Henderson on December 25, 1855, and was buried there with full military honors, General Thomas J. Rusk officiating. Smith's tomb, located at the forks of South Main Street, is of massive brick and stone twelve feet high. His portrait hangs over the judge's stand in the District Court room of Rusk County.

¹³⁰ Fulmore, *History and Geography of Texas*, 117.

¹³¹ *Ibid.*, 90.

¹³² Johnson, *Texas and Texans*, V, 2349.

¹³³ Homer S. Thrall, *A Pictorial History of Texas*, 621.

¹³⁴ Fulmore, *History and Geography of Texas*, 90.

¹³⁵ *Members of the Legislature*, 4.

Smith County, created in 1846, was named in honor of James Smith.¹³⁶

SMITH, ROBERT W.

Robert W. Smith was born in North Carolina on December 9, 1814, and emigrated to Texas in 1836. He enlisted in the Texas Army on March 6, 1836, and fought in the battle of San Jacinto as first lieutenant in Captain Hayden S. Arnold's company.¹³⁷ In 1837 he married Mary Jane Watkins.

Smith served as captain of a company in the battle of the Neches in 1839, and fired the shot that killed Chief Bowles of the Cherokees.¹³⁸ Smith took Bowles' sword, a gift made to the chief by Sam Houston, and presented it to the Masonic Lodge in Henderson. Loaned to Colonel James H. Jones during the Civil War, the sword was afterwards returned to the Masonic Lodge, where it remained until 1890 when it was presented to the Cherokee Nation in Oklahoma.¹³⁹

Robert W. Smith, elected the first sheriff of Rusk County, served as captain of a company under the command of General James Smith during the Regulator - Moderator War. Robert W. Smith died in 1851 and was buried in the Pleasant Hill cemetery, seven miles west of Henderson, on a plot of ground donated by him for church and cemetery purposes.

STEDMAN, WILLIAM

William Stedman, son of Nathan Alexander and Ann Clark (Ramsey) Stedman, was born in 1822, at Pittsboro, North Carolina. He graduated from the University of North Carolina in 1842, and came to Texas in 1851, settling at Henderson.¹⁴⁰

Stedman practiced law and represented Rusk County in the House of the Sixth Texas Legislature, 1855-1856.¹⁴¹ He was a member of Clinton lodge. He was elected attorney general of Texas in August, 1863, but because of his anti-

¹³⁶ Fulmore, *History and Geography of Texas*, 90.

¹³⁷ Sam Houston Dixon and Louis Wiltz Kemp, *The Heroes of San Jacinto*, 350.

¹³⁸ John Henry Brown, *Indian Wars and Pioneers of Texas*, 68; John H. Reagan, "The Expulsion of the Cherokees from East Texas," *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*, I, 46.

¹³⁹ Mary Ann Broome, "Captain Robert W. Smith," *Junior Historian*, IX, Number 1, p. 19; Dixon and Kemp, *Heroes of San Jacinto*, 350.

¹⁴⁰ *Dallas Morning News*, November 7, 1890.

¹⁴¹ *Members of the Legislature*, 25.

secessionist feelings he did not qualify for the office. He served as a major on the staff of Elkanah Greer during the Civil War, and after the war he practiced law at Henderson until 1867, when he moved to Marshall.¹⁴² He was a trustee of the Henderson Masonic Female Institute in 1864. Stedman married Clara Harvey White, daughter of Thomas Willis White, founder of the **Southern Literary Messenger**. Stedman died at Marshall on November 6, 1890.

WALLING, JESSE

Jesse Walling, son of John and Anna (Chism) Walling, was born in White County, Tennessee, on June 17, 1794. Moving to Covington County, Mississippi, in 1818, the family returned to Fayette County, Tennessee, in 1825. Jesse Walling came to Nacogdoches in 1834, and enlisted in the Texas Army on March 26, 1836.¹⁴³

Walling, a member of Captain Hayden Arnold's Company, fought in the battle of San Jacinto and remained with the army until June 22, 1836.¹⁴⁴ For his services during the Texas Revolution he received a grant of land in Rusk County. He married Ann Wheelock at Nacogdoches on March 26, 1838.

In 1842-1843 Walling represented Nacogdoches in the House of the Seventh Congress of the Republic.¹⁴⁵ For a time he lived in Shelby County, but later moved to Millville, Rusk County. Walling died at Millville in August, 1866.¹⁴⁶

WATKINS, ARCHIBALD H.

Archibald H. Watkins, son of Jesse T. and Mary (McCorkle) Watkins, was born on February 9, 1812, in the Forked Deer section near Memphis, Tennessee. He came to Texas with his parents in 1833, settling near Clarksville, where he and his father were charter members of the Clarksville Presbyterian Church. The father, Jesse T., was killed in 1837 by the Cherokee Indians while carrying out treaty negotiations for Sam Houston.¹⁴⁷

Young Watkins returned to Tennessee and married Mary Ann Hendrick on March 20, 1836. The couple then moved to Texas, settling near Mount Enterprise in Rusk County. Later they moved a few miles east of Minden.

¹⁴² Dallas Morning News, November 7, 1890.

¹⁴³ Dixon and Kemp, *Heroes of San Jacinto*, 251.

¹⁴⁴ *Ibid.*; Biographical Directory of the Texas Conventions and Congresses, 185.

¹⁴⁵ Biographical Directory, 185.

¹⁴⁶ Dixon and Kemp, *Heroes of San Jacinto*, 352.

¹⁴⁷ Frank W. Johnson, *History of Texas and Texans*, IV, 2120; Dallas News, June 6, 1937.

After the creation of Rusk County in 1843, Watkins was elected to serve as first chief justice.¹⁴⁸ For many years he was junior warden of Clinton Lodge in Henderson. He preached in several Rusk County churches, and he helped build the present Pine Grove Church. Watkins died at his plantation home near Brachfield on May 1, 1881. He was the father of eleven children, the youngest, Jeremiah Edmund, becoming a noted and beloved Rusk County doctor.

WATKINS, JEREMIAH EDMUND

Jeremiah Edmund Watkins, son of Archibald H. and Mary Ann (Hendrick) Watkins, was born on October 13, 1861, near Brachfield, Rusk County, Texas. After graduating from the medical school of Tulane University in 1885, he began practicing medicine at Pinehill the same year. Dr. Watkins also practiced medicine in San Antonio and Beckville before moving to Henderson in 1895. He was one of the first physicians in East Texas to administer antitoxin in the treatment of diphtheria.¹⁴⁹

Dr. Watkins was considered by many to be the best authority on the history of Rusk County, his father having lived in the county before organization and then serving as first chief justice after the county was created in 1843. In 1941 Dr. Watkins became the first co-sponsor of Junior Historian Chapter 22 of the Texas State Historical Association in the Henderson High School. At one time he was president of the Jesse Watkins Chapter of the Sons of the American Revolution.

For more than half a century Dr. Watkins practiced medicine in Rusk County, and he served for several terms as president of the Rusk County Medical Association. Late in life he drove his own car, and as an ardent sports fan he seldom missed a local football, baseball, or basketball game.¹⁵⁰

Dr. Watkins married Claudia L. Woolworth on March 26, 1895, and they were parents of three daughters. At the time of his death on February 7, 1949, at Henderson, Dr. Watkins was characterized as "one of the most beloved men of Rusk County."¹⁵¹ The following day when his funeral was held, flags in Henderson were flown at half-

¹⁴⁸ Records, 1844, Rusk County, 7, M.S., County Clerk's Office, Henderson, Texas.

¹⁴⁹ Dallas Morning News, December 1, 1940.

¹⁵⁰ Ibid.

¹⁵¹ Henderson Daily News, February 7, 1949.

staff as a tribute to his memory and in appreciation of the services he had rendered to Rusk County citizens.¹⁵² On February 28, Representative Joe B. Fleming read the following resolution into the **House Journal** of the Fifty-first Texas Legislature:

H.S.R. No. 97, in Memory of Dr. J. E. Watkins.

WHEREAS, God, in His infinite wisdom, called to rest Dr. J. E. Watkins on February 7, 1949. Dr. Watkins died at the Henderson Hospital after a short illness at the age of eighty-seven years; and,

Dr. Watkins was born near the Brachfield community in Rusk County on October 13, 1861. He had practiced medicine in San Antonio, and Pinehill before moving to Henderson.

The Watkins family was one of the first to settle in Rusk County. Dr. Watkins' father, Archibald Watkins, was the first County Judge of Rusk County, having settled in that County in 1836.

Dr. Watkins was past president of the Jesse Watkins Chapter, Sons of the American Revolution. He had served as an elder in the Central Presbyterian Church half a century; and,

Whereas, Dr. Watkins is survived by his wife; three daughters, Mrs. H. D. Miller, Dallas, Texas; Mrs. Jimmie Harris and Miss Myrtis Watkins, both of Henderson, Texas; now therefore, be it

Resolved by the House of Representatives of the State of Texas, that we express to the bereaved family our sorrow over the passing of this beloved citizen; and be it further

Resolved, that copies of this Resolution be sent to the members of the family; that a page of the House Journal be dedicated to his memory; and that when the House adjourns today it do so out of respect to Dr. J. E. Watkins.¹⁵³

WIGGINS, JAMES FREDERICK

James Frederick Wiggins, son of Hundley and Nancy (Wilson) Wiggins, was born in Shelbyville, Bedford County, Tennessee, on September 9, 1823. He left Tennessee in 1845 and arrived in San Augustine, Texas, in 1854. Later he settled near Jacksonville in Cherokee County¹⁵⁴ and had extensive land holdings in Cherokee and Rusk counties.

At the outbreak of the Civil War Wiggins organized a company of eighty-nine men in Cherokee and Rusk counties.

¹⁵² Ibid., February 8, 1949.

¹⁵³ Journal of the House of Representatives of the Fifty-first Legislature of the State of Texas, I, 516, 517.

¹⁵⁴ Davis and Grobe, New Encyclopedia of Texas, 1706.

The company, mustered into service in front of the Alamo in the spring of 1862, became Company F of the 7th Regiment of Texas Mounted Volunteers.¹⁵⁵ The company participated in the battles of Yellow Bayou, Galveston, and Mansfield. Wiggins rose to the rank of captain and served for a time under General Henry Hopkins Sibley in New Mexico.

Captured in Louisiana, Wiggins was later exchanged and returned to his plantation home near Jacksonville. He was married first to Harriet Payne of San Augustine, and on May 22, 1856, at Henderson, he married Josephine Absabeth Allen Vinson.¹⁵⁶ A Mason and Presbyterian, Wiggins died on September 8, 1876.

WYNNE, RICHARD M.

Richard M. Wynne, son of William Benjamin and Sarah Anne (Moore) Wynne, was born in Haywood County, Tennessee, on June 2, 1844, and came to Rusk County in that year.¹⁵⁷ After living in the Bellevue settlement for seventeen years, Wynne served as an officer during the Civil War with the 10th Texas Regiment. For a time he served in the Army of Tennessee and was wounded in the battles of Atlanta and Nashville.¹⁵⁸

After the Civil War Wynne turned to Rusk County and in 1866, at the age of twenty-one, was elected sheriff. For ten years he practiced law in Rusk County, and served as senator in the Seventeenth Texas Legislature.¹⁵⁹ He served on the committee which framed the law for the establishment of the University of Texas.¹⁶⁰

Wynne married Laura B. Kelly on January 28, 1867. He moved to Fort Worth in 1883, and was superintendent of the Confederate Home in Austin at the time of his death on July 15, 1912.¹⁶¹

YOUNG, JAMES

James Young was born on a farm near Henderson in 1866. After graduating from the law school at the University of Texas in 1891, he began law practice in Kaufman.¹⁶²

¹⁵⁵ Ernest Emory Bailey, *Texas Historical and Biographical Record*, 567.

¹⁵⁶ *Ibid.*

¹⁵⁷ Buckley B. Paddock, *A Twentieth Century and Biographical Record of North and West Texas*, II, 111.

¹⁵⁸ *Dallas Morning News*, July 16, 1912.

¹⁵⁹ *Members of the Legislature*, 103.

¹⁶⁰ Paddock, *Twentieth Century and Biographical Record*, II, 111.

¹⁶¹ *Dallas News*, July 16, 1912.

¹⁶² *Kaufman Herald*, May 7, 1942.

In politics Young became a supporter of the Texas Prohibitionists and campaigned for the party throughout the state. He served in the United States Congress from 1910 to 1920,¹⁶³ and was a loyal supporter of the legislative program of Woodrow Wilson.

Young was a candidate for governor in 1930, but was defeated by Ross Sterling. He maintained a law practice at Henderson until 1937, when he moved to Dallas. Married to Allie Nash in 1892, Young died in Dallas on May 7, 1942, and was buried at Kaufman.

* * * *

It is interesting to note from the biographies that many of the persons have been prominently identified in Texas history as well as the history of Rusk County. Such educators as Isaac Alexander, William L. Bringhurst, Thomas S. Gathright, Oscar Henry Cooper, George Pierce Garrison, and Robert Teague Milner have probably earned a permanent place in the field of education. Timothy Pillsbury, James Henry Jones, Malcolm D. Graham, Webster Flanagan, and James Winwright Flanagan have all been known in state and national circles as statesmen of note. Soldiers of San Jacinto like Henry Chapman, Robert W. Smith, and Jesse Walling; Richard Brown of the Mier Expedition; and numerous persons serving in the Confederate Army have all been associated with the history and development of the county. Other persons in different fields have been important in the history of the county. And particularly interesting is the fact that four Rusk Countians have had their names given to Texas counties, namely, James Smith, William Wright Morris, Mathew Duncan Ector, and William Beck Ochiltree.

¹⁶³ Biographical Directory of the American Congress, 1774-1927, p. 1737.

APPENDIX I

POST OFFICES AND POSTMASTERS IN RUSK COUNTY ¹

The following information is given in the order of the establishment of the post offices, with the names of the postmasters and dates of appointment.

Names of Post Office	Name of Postmaster	Date of Appointment
Henderson	C. Miller	22 May, 1846
Mulberry Grove	Henry Henson	12 Sept., 1846
Gage's	David Gage	5 Feb., 1847
Sand Hills	Asher Branch	8 March, 1847
Walling's Ferry	John W. Yarbrough	7 Sept., 1847
Pine Hill	James Clark	21 October, 1847
Walling's Mills	Thomas J. Roberts	26 Nov., 1847
Millville	Thomas J. Roberts	9 May, 1848
Fredonia	James H. Thompson	22 Feb., 1849
Mount Enterprise	Chas. Vincent	9 April, 1849
Bellevue	George W. Pirtle	19 June, 1849
San Cosme	Sol. M. Grigsby	1 Sept., 1849
New Salem	Poindexter Payne	19 Sept., 1849
Anadarco	William I. Barry	12 Nov., 1849
Rabbit Creek	Wm. P. Chisum	29 Jan., 1850
Minden	Wm. H. Pate	4 March, 1850
Cotton Plant	Chas. Kuykendall	21 August, 1850
Caledonia	Sam T. Allen	27 Jan., 1851
New Danville	John W. Wilson	3 April, 1852
Bunker Hill	Edward Vinzent	20 August, 1852
London	Wilson W. Baker	22 March, 1853
Murval	Archibald H. Watkins	1 June, 1853
Calhoun	James F. Thorn	28 October, 1853
Harmony Hill	Wm. Johnston	2 May, 1854
Centre	John F. Robertson	13 June, 1854
Alma	John B. Murray	8 Sept., 1854
Iron Mountain	James H. Everett	19 Sept., 1856
Reagan	James T. Pinkston	30 June, 1858
Wherry's	John Wherry	8 Dec., 1858
Monroe	John F. Robertson	4 Dec., 1860
Steele's Grove	William S. Steele	4 July, 1868

¹ Records of the Post Office Department, M.S., Records of Appointments of Postmasters, The National Archives, Washington, D. C.

Names of Post Office	Name of Postmaster	Date of Appointment
Brown's Bluff	Monroe Harris	12 August, 1871
Flanagan's Mills	Robert B. Flanagan	28 June, 1872
Glenfawn	Charles L. Nunally	5 August, 1872
Kilgore	Virgil H. Kilgore	4 Feb., 1873
Overton	James B. Harper	17 March, 1873
Locust Grove	L. S. Markham	15 May, 1873
Lawsonville	Mrs. Amanda M. Lawson	4 June, 1877
Spivey	Emma J. Wiggins	9 Dec., 1879
Gourdneck	H. Perkins	22 June, 1880
Stevens	Hiram B. Gatlin	3 August, 1880
Motley	Frank E. Spharler	31 August, 1880
Easton	William M. Gladney	31 Dec., 1883
Carlysle	William C. Pirtle	20 March, 1884
Gould	George R. Wood	17 April, 1884
Pirtle	Charles E. Wood	25 April, 1884
Abner	John A. Williams	8 Sept., 1884
Hendricks	Daniel J. Barlow	23 Dec., 1884
Farmers Institute	James P. Crim	4 Nov., 1885
Bradshaw	Benjamin B. C. Kelly	6 Nov., 1886
Tatum	Paul Tatum	6 Jan., 1886
Crim	James P. Crim	8 Jan. 1887
Scooba	Elhanan W. Eiland	30 Nov., 1887
Craig	Charles C. Irwin	24 March, 1888
Mims	M. Hunt	19 June, 1888
Laneville	Philetus R. Williamson	26 Sept., 1888
Carlisle	Elijah M. Menefee	3 Jan., 1889
Jacinto	Henry J. Griffin	4 Dec., 1891
Tasso	Irene Gaston	11 April, 1892
Norfolk	Ida Eaton	18 Nov., 1892
Church Hill	George S. Strong	26 April, 1893
Rhodes	Addie Wallace	3 June, 1883
Barnhart	Finley Hunt	31 July, 1893
Eulalie	Henry H. Moreland	31 July, 1893
Chapman	Francis M. Bridges	28 April, 1894
Fussell	Richard H. McNiel	12 June, 1894
Welch	Nathaniel Johnston	19 March, 1896
Stewart	William C. Ray	13 Nov., 1896
Dirgin	William R. Adams	11 July, 1898
Pone	Luther O. Neeley	31 October, 1898
Flanagan	John Kroeger	5 March, 1900
Cyril	Henry Studdard	9 March, 1900
Irwin	James T. Irwin, Jr.	11 June, 1900
Pylas	George W. Smith	14 July, 1900

Names of Post Office	Name of Postmaster	Date of Appointment
Brachfield	Ella I. Phillips	14 August, 1900
March	Lowranzo D. Fryman	25 May, 1901
Locklin	Hattie Ruark	17 March, 1902
Pepper	James R. Wilson	13 June, 1902
Lyle	Morris Fussell	21 Feb., 1903

APPENDIX II

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY ¹

Milton M. Boggess Company, First Texas Volunteer (Cavalry) mustered into service at Henderson on April 1861.

Officers

Milton M. Boggess, Capt., age 30
James D. McFarland, 1st Lt. 29
John T. Bromley, 2d Lt, 27
Abyah B. Latham, 3rd Lt, 25
James R. Helms, 1st Sgt, 22
Theodore McFarland, 2nd Sgt, 26
Andrew J. Kilgore, 3rd Sgt, 26
Tom Cooley, 4th Sgt, 22
John Dean, 1st Cpl. 45
George W. Williams, 2nd Cpl. 25
John C. Evans, 3rd Cpl. 28
Martin B. Coates, 4th Cpl. 23
Dickson H. L. Hogg, Surgeon, 27
William H. Harris, 1st Bugler, 18
Henry J. Boggess, 2nd Bugler, 18
William D. Dean, farrier, 25
Oliver Jackson, Blacksmith, 26

Privates

John Y. Anderson	Robert Moore, 28
Martin V. Anderson	Hugh O. Moore, 20
John F. Brown, 19	Ira A. McDonough, 19
Brazzelia B. Boggess, 19	Orlando McFarland, 24
James H. Brown, 19	William H. McKee, 18
Jesse W. Bell, 18	Wiley S. Maris, 31
William Black, 18	John G. McClarty, 32
William L. Cameron, 24	George W. Neely, 45
Robert Crow, 23	James A. Helms, 19
Ezekiel J. Cody, 20	James W. Parr
Willis S. Curbo, 20	Thomas J. Pirtle, 22
William Cooper, 25	William H. Prewit, 23
Robert Cates, 21	William E. Porter, 24
William Cates, 25	Frost T. Pollitt, 25
Julien S. Devereux, 20	Harris B. Robinson, 23
Alexander Dauaire, 20	John Reeves, 18
James K. P. Dean, 18	Thomas W. Rhea, 18
William H. Evans, 26	Robert W. Smith, 18

¹ Archives, Texas State Library, Austin, Texas.

George G. M. Gaut, 23	Thomas W. Steadman, 18
Thomas Green, 34	William H. Stewart, 19
Daniel N. Hudson, 23	Francis M. Sartain, 22
William D. Hoggsett, 22	William L. Stanley, 25
John D. James, 19	Thomas W. Scott, 21
George W. H. Johnson, 26	Calvin G. Terry, 28
Calvin Keirse, 24	John B. Taylor, 19
Samuel Kinley, 23	Jesse T. Walling, 21
Isaac Killogh, 21	Robert H. Wilson, 20
James B. Leach, 20	John H. Wood, 20
James G. McVay, 18	John Woodruff, 28
Hezekiah V. B. Moor, 23	Charles N. White, 23
Silas W. Moore, 19	Joseph G. Warriner, 22

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY ²

Muster Roll of Captain P. Hardeman's Company in the 1st Regt. of Texas Mounted Volunteers, commanded by Colonel John S. Ford. Enrolled April 15, 1861, in Rusk County. Mustered into service at San Antonio, May 23, 1861.

Officers

Capt. P. Hardeman 30
 1st Lt. J. T. Aycock 31
 2d Lt. Marsh Glenn 24
 1st Sgt. M. D. Moore 21
 2d Sgt. P. S. Graves 23
 3rd Sgt. R. J. Johnson 23
 4th Sgt. W. M. Payne 25
 1st Cpl. C. A. Shanks 28
 2d Cpl. Wm. P. McHenry 21
 3d Cpl. N. G. Witherspoon 21
 4th Cpl. A. Thompson 25

Privates

W. A. D. Armstrong, 25	R. M. Jackson, 19
Stephen Arnold, 24	J. M. Kyle, 20
Albert N. Alford, 19	Wm. A. King, 21
John H. Bonner, 19	John O. Kirk, 24
Elkanoh Bush, 21	J. C. King, 19
Augustus C. Brown, 18	Wm. F. King, 23
Argyle Beeson, 22	A. C. Logan, 27
Frank S. Box, 18	G. H. Long, 22
John E. Bowers, 19	J. S. Logan, 22
G. W. Box, 21	Wm. F. Lee, 20
John I. Burton, 20	J. McLangston, 21
R. K. Blackshear, 25	J. McKeller, 44
Robt. T. Cannon, 25	Thomas D. McHenry, 26
Leroy A. Cox, 43	H. S. Mynatt, 24

² Ibid.

W. G. Capna, 28	M. M. Mallard, 16
Thos. L. Camp	Ira Millican, 19
C. C. Coats, 21	Wm. D. Macgill, 25
S. J. Conce (Cruse?) 25	Robert McClure, 20
S. M. Collins, 17	Wm. F. Marlow, 28
J. M. Copeland, 21	J. W. Mosely, 20
J. W. Crooms, 25	G. F. Numson, 24
T. E. Davenport, 22	John Ozment, 17
J. M. Donahoo, 20	W. H. Perry, 18
F. E. Dasset, 21	Geo. F. Pruitt, 21
R. W. Dean, 25	C. M. Quarles, 17
Wm. F. Dorsey, 20	G. Rasco, 30
S. M. Derden, 21	Wm. B. Rose, 25
N. B. Duke, 19	J. A. Shanks, 21
T. T. Dunnica, 19	J. W. Spivey, 31
T. G. Edmisten, 19	A. J. Sloan, 22
W. H. Ezell, 19	T. B. Stribling, 24
A. W. Ford, 42	Pink Skilton, 15
B. F. Fryman, 22	T. L. Simpson, 18
S. H. Greane, 18	C. I. Taylor, 23
Wm. F. Hyde, 31	M. Taylor, 22
P. S. Graves, 19	J. W. Tucker, 24
Junius B. Harris, 21	E. A. Treadwell, 25
Wm. H. Hatchett, 25	B. T. Thorn, 20
J. W. Heth, 18	J. T. Vest, 24
G. W. Hardaway, 24	H. H. Vinson, 21
Jerome B. Harris, 22	Wm. L. Welch, 25
Chas. W. Hurt, 18	J. M. Margraves, 24
M. K. Hunter, 23	A. Huntsman, 27
N. W. Hunter, 21	J. P. Raines, 19
C. P. Hamilton, 22	D. W. Lewis, 21
Jesse R. Jones, 25	H. C. Hubert, 26
W. J. Joyce, 32	

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY ³

Muster Roll of Captain R. H. Cumby's Company of the County of Rusk and the State of Texas. Organized in the town of Henderson on the 7th day of May, 1861.

Officers

R. H. Cumby, Captain
M. D. Ector, 1st Lieutenant
J. S. Boggess, 2nd Lieutenant
B. F. Durham, 2nd (Brevet) Lt.
J. B. Park, 1st Sgt.
R. G. Childress, 2nd Sgt.
T. Ruddle, 3rd Sgt.
Andrew Weir, 4th Sgt.
John Brosey, 1st Cpl.

³ Ibid.

John Bell, 2nd Cpl.
 R. W. Oliver, 3rd Cpl.
 W. B. Isam, 4th Cpl.
 Harrison Hobbs, Drummer
 D. J. Cater, Fifer

Privates

J. T. Estell	A. S. Wood
R. A. Jameson	J. M. Roundtree
W. C. Jameson	W. Kilgore
A. H. McDonough	J. H. Richardson
J. R. Armstrong	E. S. Vansickle
P. Steward	L. R. Scruggs
J. T. Ray	W. E. Strong
J. D. Moss	J. A. Smith
W. L. Hall	D. Shaw
W. L. Park	J. C. Miner
J. H. Parsons	J. W. Miner
J. P. Roberts	Wm. Baird
N. M. Reagan	J. Gibbs
M. Casey	G. B. Eanett
I. I. Quarrells	H. W. Prior
G. H. Gould	J. A. Wasson
J. A. Whiteside	Ingle
A. C. Parison	J. W. McCord
C. W. Diamond	W. C. Smith
Oberthere	C. A. Dunn
R. W. Poe	J. M. Lockridge
M. D. Graham	Cullin Carr
J. T. Barry	J. Ney
S. A. Marshall	G. C. Craig
M. Lesermann	L. M. Nichols
M. Mayer	W. H. R. Young
C. A. Fen	S. Young
G. H. Lewis	G. H. Hamage
J. T. Walling	J. C. Ballenger
J. C. Lovelany	J. P. Watkins
Chas. Reagan	J. M. Griffin
C. B. Alston	A. B. Turner
L. D. Kelley	W. C. Long
D. Rosenberg	H. F. Spear
T. P. McKinney	E. L. Reddick
C. C. Wright	W. Tatum
C. M. Wilson	H. S. Weir
S. R. Walling	T. Long
J. H. Johnson	W. Clay
J. R. Pierce	J. Nixon
J. S. Guthery	R. A. Forest
Chas. Davenport	J. S. Hendrick
W. H. G. Guthsey	J. Deason

E. E. Penn
A. Hold
J. M. Fambro
M. V. Lard

W. Bierd
E. M. Sturgess
C. Lewis

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY ⁴

J. M. Barton's Company. The company was organized at Bellevue, Rusk County, in July, 1861. The roll of the company is from the memory of J. M. Spinks and P. B. Barber.

Officers

J. M. Barton, Captain
J. M. Thompson, 1st Lieut
Bob Mitchell, 2nd Lieut
Henderson ? ? ? 3rd Lieut
Buck Kilgore, 1st Srgt
Ethan Stroud, 2nd Srgt
Bill Watson, 3rd Srgt
Whit Arnold, 1st Corp
John Whitfield, 2nd Corp
Mat Hopson, 3rd Corp

Privates

Jim Anderson	T. G. Littlejohn
Alfred Ames	Balis Lay
Bob Anderson	George Moore
George Birdwell	Harvey Moore
Ben Birdwell	Lum Monk
Ed. Barthold	Rank Monk
Bill Butler	Sam Mitchell
Joe Becton	Bill Miller
Andrew Brit	Mark Miller
Kerge Bell	Isaac Martin
Tobe Barham	Andrew Martin
P. D. Barker	Paige Martin
Jeff Barton	Page Washerman
John Collum	John Protho
Andrew Carter	Granvil Patrick
Dave Dickson	Bob Patrick
Dal Durkee	Bill Richards
Andrew Dungan	Jeff Robertson
Griff Davis	Jeff Rosson
Lawrence Day	Charlie Rettig
Acie Erwin	Bill Robertson
Mat Furlough	Frank Robertson
John Furlough	Ross Russell
Tom Gladney	Crew Russell
Jim Gladney	John Renfro

⁴ Ibid.

Henry Gatlin
 Judge Gaggett
 Reuben Goforth
 Bill Garner
 Cas Gibson
 Stoke Hatchins
 Mat Hopson
 Bill Hopson
 Briggs Hopson
 Ed Hopson
 Cudy Harnage
 Howell Hale
 Bud Hale
 Reede Hicks
 John Hicks
 Bill Holloway
 Clay Bolt
 John Johnson
 Rance Johnson
 Alex Jordan
 T. B. Linthacum
 Jordan Langston
 Tom McClure
 Lige Phillips
 Palon Phillips
 Burt Phillips
 Wm. M. Parker
 H. R. T. Parker
 G. T. Kenard
 Jake Kele
 Tom Lang
 Tom Leach

Sam Spinks
 Roe Spinks
 Tom Still
 John Still
 Jack Starr
 Archie Smith
 Alpha Stroud
 Jonathan Stone
 Bill Smith
 George Trammell
 Tom Trammell
 Lum Trammell
 Frank Thompson
 Marion Thornton
 John Templeton
 John Tubbs
 Frank Trewett
 Dick Tutt
 G. Hans Tutt
 Sam Turner
 Oscar Wilson
 Jim Wade
 Jim Waits
 John J. Weaver
 Charlie Wise
 Jim Whitfield
 John Whitfield
 Mart Wilkins
 Jesse Watkins
 Benton Watson
 R. M. Wynne

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY ⁵

Officers

H. D. E. Redwine, Captain
 W. A. Moore, 1st Lieut.
 W. T. Brewer, 2nd Lieut.
 P. C. Jones, Brevet Lt.
 E. S. Vansicle, 1st Sgt.
 J. H. McCauley, 2nd Sgt.
 J. H. Deason, 3rd Sgt.
 Wm. Melton, 4th Sgt.
 J. C. Deason, 1st Cpl.
 John Ingle, 2nd Cpl.
 J. M. Cameron, 3rd Cpl.
 Wm. York, 4th Cpl.
 A. S. Mays, Ensing

⁵ Ibid.

Privates

Arnold, M. V.	McCarter, J. B.
Berry, S. W.	Mayberry, G. W.
Barber, John	McCauley, R. H.
Buckley, John	Murff, J. M.
Cunningham, James	Melton, D. I.
Culp, L. W.	Navill, P. J.
Curbo, Thomas	Nelson, John M.
Clay, William	Nelson, J. W. C.
Craig, P. B.	Oliver, E. H.
Curvin, Thomas	Pinkston, Henry
Deason, R. C.	Phillips, Caleb
Easley, William	Parish, S. G.
Eaton, Joel	Redwine, R. F.
Ector, W. B.	Roundtree, J. H.
Gibson, Robert	Ransom, H. B.
Gatliff, Aaron	Summers, W. T.
Gilley, James	Sentill, J. B.
Hargraves, Edward	Stone, W. J.
Hardin, F. P.	Spence, I. I.
Hudson, Francis	Tucker, W.
Harvey, W. H. H.	Terry, James
Lloyd, I. B.	Welch, W. H. H.
Langston, Natham	Waggoner, Angus
Ledbetter, J. R.	Waggoner, John
Melton, P. F.	Waggoner, Daniel
McAnulty, W. N.	Wimberly, E. A.
Matthews, W. N.	York, Jesse
Matthews, Wm. J.	

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY ⁶ Organized and left for front July 28, 1862

Officers

H. A. Wallace, Capt., 33
McCallum, D. A., 1st Lieut. 30
Hays, C. S., 2nd Lt. 28
Brooks, J. R. K. 3rd Lt. 30
Barksdale, W. E. 1st Sgt. 34
Ray J. R. 2nd Sgt. 30
Hays, B. F., 3rd Sgt. 26
Deason, J. 4th Sgt. 32
Turner, R. R. 1st Cpl. 31
Hays, D. M. 2nd Cpl. 27
Parker, F. J. 3rd Cpl. 34
Hull, R. L. 4th Cpl. 19
Akins, J. F., Drummer 30
Dulin, D., Fifer 38

⁶ Ibid.

Privates

Akins, J. D., 19
 Arnold, J. T., 29
 Arledge, J., 29
 Acrey, W., 28
 Acrey, D.
 Acrey, J.
 Anderson, J. E. 30
 Bane, J. A., 30
 Barker, G. T.
 Barry, A. B.
 Burns, C. G., 17
 Bates, W. J., 32
 Burkhalter, Wm., 30
 Burns, W. S. H., 18
 Billingsley, T. P., 50
 Cook, James, 28
 Connor, P. G., 23
 Connally, J. W., 27
 Drennan, J. C., 21
 Deason, J. C., 34
 Doherty, R. J., 31
 Duncan, S. S., 34
 Edge, J., 25
 Easley, J. O., 34
 Easley, W. M., 24
 Ferguson, A., 30
 Grimes, W. R., 32
 Grimes, J., 23
 Grimes, M. H., 31
 Giles, J., 33
 Gage, H., 26
 Ghentry, J. G., 30
 Gowens, R. H., 34
 Golden, N. A., 21
 Holly, R. R., 21
 Hunt, T., 27
 Harriss, T. J., 19
 Harper, J. H., 29
 Hudman, J. T., 21
 Hawkins, C. C., 30
 Holleman, G. W., 40
 Hays, W. H. H., 24
 Hallume, R. B., 20
 Hariss, W. D., 34
 Irby, B., 27
 Jones, J. M., 19
 Jones, T. L.
 Jones, J. H., 27
 Lee, W. W., 20
 Leslie, J. A., 34
 McCall, L. D., 21
 McKnight, J. F., 20
 Moseley, T. J., 21
 Nall, J. M., 29
 Nichols, Wm., 44
 Nicks, T. L., 21
 Osburn, G. W., 33
 Parker, A. J., 33
 Peterson, J. F., 22
 Parker, W. E., 28
 Parker, J., 37
 Peurifoy, A. J., 29
 Riley, J. T., 27
 Raburn, J. D., 34
 Rhodes, J. O., 33
 Reinhatt, J. P. H., 22
 Robertson, E. T., 30
 Reid, J. M.
 Strickland, T. W., 28
 Strickland, W. A., 23
 Stanley, A., 31
 Stoveall, C. L., 27
 Stone, T. W. S., 20
 Smith, J. D., 30
 Tinkle, G. L., 18
 Turner, R. G. W., 26
 Thomas, B. W., 26
 Wright, J. C., 29
 Wood, H. F., 23
 West, H., 33
 Welch, J. A. H., 18
 Wallace, W. M., 35
 Walker, J., 20
 Whitfield, W. B.,
 Treadwell, W. L., 29
 T. Guthrie, 18
 Owens, W. J.
 Scott, F. M., 30
 Little, J. C. J., 18
 Baker, W., 17
 Holly, S., 32
 Smith, Charles, 50
 John V. Conner, 24
 John T. Ghentry, 18
 Robert Singletary, 34
 N. D. McCrary, 18

Kuykendall, W. A., 21
Koonce, J. A. 30

A. L. Barry

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY ⁷

Officers

M. D. Leverett, Capt., age 48
James McAnully, 1st Lt., 46
Calvin Buckhanon, 2nd Lt., 41
James B. Stovall, 3rd Lt., 47
James Dillingham, 1st Sgt., 49
John Scott, 2nd Sgt., 46
Wm. M. Gardner, 3rd Sgt.
Wm. Starr, 4th Sgt. 42
J. C. Sexton, 1st Cpl. 41
Joseph Shepherd, 2nd Cpl. 46
T. G. Russell, 3rd Cpl., 44

Privates

Arnold, A. G., 43	Hiltin, W. H.
Alm, R.	Hightower, J. M.
Arnold, Moses	Hohman, H. B.
Alin, Jesser	Kimbal, R.
Arnold, Robert	Long, J. H., 47
Ash, John	McDavid, W. J., 48
Allen, John	Melton, D. M., 41
Bean, C. S., 43	Moore, Abner
Barnhart, Brice, 40	Milstead, Joseph, 45
Brown, William	Medford, John A., 43
Berry, George	McAlister, Orin, 43
Boyer, John	Milton, Jessee
Brown, Thomas A.	Nelson, J. C., 46
Cooper, S. M.	Oliver, I. R., 50
Cooper, M. D., 49	Prior, W. J., 44
Carmichael, R., 46	Patrick, J. T. C., 49
Cook, F. M.	Pierson, W. H., 47
Cook, Ben J.	Power, G. F.
Dickson, A. J., 45	Power, K. H.
Doolin, Daniel	Sperlin,, W. R., 49
Dobins, J. B.	Smith, F. A., 42
Ethridge, James	Shelton, R. H. C.
Evans, George E.	Stone, Lemuel
Ethridge, Thos. A.	Singletary, O. W.
Erskin, James	Thomas, S. I., 49
Hambro, Z., 45	Tinkle, Wm. S., 43
Fenton, James, 42	Vick, H. P., 45
Garry, James, 48	Wood, Eli
Goin, D., 47	Wilson, Loom
Gatlin, E. V., 43	Whitley, Wm., 49

⁷ Ibid.

Gibson, John
 Hamilton, R. S., 46
 Hunt, William, 48
 Hancock, B. A., 47
 Ham, Jesse, 47
 Harris, G. S., 43
 Hamlet, E. B.

Walker, T. B., 41
 Wood, J. W.
 Wilbanks, Calvin
 Young, T. S.
 Rolla, G., 48
 Lee, John A., 44
 Cason

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY^s

September 1, 1861, New Salem, Rusk County. "The New Salem Invincibles."

Officers

Jas. F. Wiggins, Capt.
 James W. Gray, 1st Lt.
 A. P. Goldsberry, 2nd Lt.
 William C. Wiggins, 3rd Lt.
 Washington Wrenn, Orderly Sgt.
 Frank Elkins, 2nd Sgt.
 P. H. Johnson, 3rd Sgt.
 Melton Mays, 4th Sgt.
 F. H. Edwards, 1st Cpl.
 A. E. Payne, 2nd Cpl.

Privates

Bates, W. L.	Landrum, Jas. T.
Bradshaw, Bruce	Loftis, G. W.
Bradshaw, Frank	Loftis, M. L.
Bates, S. G.	Nelson, R. W.
Bradley, B. A.	Nelson, Samuel
Botoms, S. A.	Newsom, Wm.
Baker, Wm.	Quaid, B. W.
Baker, J. C.	Roberts, W. G.
Garrett, Wm. T.	Richardson, W. G.
Garrett, Geo. D.	Richardson, Everett
Green, W. H.	Richardson, J. H.
Goldsberry, R.	Richie, B. A.
Garrison, H.	Richie, Robert R.
Garrison, W. D.	Rowe, Joshua
Greenway, J. W.	Reagan, N. M.
Graham, W. L.	Smith, Thos. J.
Garner, A. J.	Smith, J. W.
Cook, J. W.	Summers, Melton
Crews, T. C.	Kellam, John M.
Crews, T. J.	Knight, Louis M.
Dodson, Thos. L.	King, R. F.
Dodson, J. W.	Montgomery,
Dyac, L. J.	Stephen D.
Foreman, Joel W.	Moore, Silas M.

^s Ibid.

Foreman, J. D.
 Few, I. L.
 Featherston, L. T.
 Harris, James
 Harmon, Jas. D.
 Heflin, R. A.
 Heflin, M. H.
 Hays, J. O.
 Heath, Burrell
 Johnston, J. H.
 Johnson, H. F.
 Jones, W. H. H.
 Jones, P. R.
 Jemeison, T. Y. T.,
 Company's Surgeon

McCremmin, D. H.
 Martin, John H.
 Mays, Bird
 McMillon, W. F.
 May, H. M.
 Prewit, J. W.
 Preston, John R.
 Sea, R. T.
 Tipton, Jacob E.
 Windsor, Jacob
 Wells, Wm. W.
 Wells, Michael
 Wilson, J. M.
 Whitley, S. R.

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY⁹

Organized in November, 1861, Company B, 14th Cavalry of Ector's Brigade of Hood's Division. The company was presented a banner by Lucy Kilgore with the words "Rusk Avengers" on it.

Officers

J. D. Hamilton, Captain
 James A. Howze, 1st Lt.
 S. W. Swan, 2nd Lt.
 C. C. Doyle, 3rd Lt.
 G. M. Gallam, 1st Sgt.
 Joel C. Phillips, 2nd Sgt.
 J. P. White, 3rd Sgt.
 Jas. R. Box, 4th Sgt.
 G. W. Truitt, 5th Sgt.
 Joel A. Brassfield, 1st Cpl.
 W. T. Kinney, 2nd Cpl.
 Jas. H. Logan, 3rd Cpl.
 William Thornton, 4th Cpl.
 R. C. Harris, Company Bugler

Privates

S. G. Arthur	J. M. Keener
J. Q. Adams	J. M. Leath
W. M. Blair	Calvin Lockridge
S. F. Burks	R. H. McNealey
W. T. Burks	Rube McAfee
J. A. Fox	J. M. McDavid
Thomas Branch	John C. McHaney
A. O. Beall	Dr. H. G. McClarty
J. A. Beall	John Malona

⁹ Muster Roll in possession of Campbell Oberthier, Henderson, Texas.

Coon Beall
 Wm. A. Brassfield
 J. M. Buckner
 C. H. Bailey
 Z. W. Bailey
 F. M. Buckelew
 Geo. Buckelew
 T. F. Chism
 R. M. Cole
 H. C. Cook
 Joe Christie
 J. M. Crow
 Geo. W. Compton
 Thos. B. Camp
 Jerry Crawford
 C. L. Carr
 E. D. Davies
 S. F. Dickey
 C. G. Denson
 Wm. Friddle
 Joel Tinsley
 Willie Green
 John C. Gaston
 Jas. M. Germany
 Jesse B. Gary
 R. H. Gary
 Elias Guerin
 Jas. L. Harrell
 J. P. Handley
 Simon Hughes
 Stanley Hughes
 Jas. Hunter
 H. C. Horton
 John B. Hayes
 John T. Hall
 Jas. Hunt
 L. C. Hicks
 Billie Hurst
 Y. H. Hamilton
 Louis Jackson

Chas. Mitchell
 A. C. Murph
 W. D. Melton
 W. C. Nickelson
 B. C. Oberthier
 M. A. Oberthier
 F. H. Oberthier
 A. A. Overton
 R. C. Overton
 A. E. Phillips
 W. T. Phillips
 Aaron Pinson
 John E. Pruitt
 G. E. Price
 Chas. Reagan
 Z. W. Robertson
 Ross Russell
 W. H. Stone
 Abner Spencer
 F. A. Spalding
 Sam Spinks
 Wm. Smith
 T. J. Smith
 C. S. Sparks
 H. H. Shadden
 John Shaw
 J. T. Wells
 F. G. Wright
 Jas. Wright
 A. C. Walling
 W. P. Warren
 Jones Williams
 Thos. J. Hunt
 James O. Hudson
 F. J. Woods
 W. A. Williams
 W. R. Walton
 E. D. Watts
 W. W. Wallace
 S. J. Woods

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY ¹⁰

Roll of Militia 1864. Ordered to report to Col. Jones' Regiment of Cavalry, 5th Brigade, on Feb. 22, 1864.

Tully Choice, age 31 years

Tully Choice, 31
 Joel Elam, 45

Holloway Agerton, 46
 Minor Anderson, 45

¹⁰ Archives, Texas State Library, Austin, Texas.

Robzent, J. Lacy, 45
J. D. Sessums, 47
P. C. Barksdale, 46
Clark Irwin, 45
Joseph Honeycutt, 48
Davis P. Howard, 37

James D. Boyd
Willis A. Hughey
Anderson Frambrough, 45
Reubin Butler, 48
Levi Crow, 49
James McCune, 48

* * * *

Letter dated Nacogdoches, March 11, 1862, to Brig.
Gen. F. B. Lubbock.

Capt. C. J. Garrison, Rusk County, 50 (men?).

Col. (J. M.?) Barton, Rusk County, 50 (men?).

* * * *

MUSTER ROLL FOR RUSK COUNTY ¹¹

Company D. 34th Texas Volunteer Cavalry

Armstrong, R. B.	Ham, Jiles
Allen, W. A.	Jackson, W. D.
Ash, Jas.	Jones, J. E.
Arnold, W. J.	Jimmerson, D. E.
Berry, L. D.	Jordan, R.
Brown, G. W.	Jordan, Jas.
Bryan, E. F.	Livsey, W. E.
Bouland, W. A.	Lockridge, W. T.
Burns, W. S.	March, A. M.
Burnet, John	Morris, J. L.
Barnett, W. H.	Morrow, H. M.
Brach, J. H.	McClure, A. C.
Brookfield, I. N.	Morgan, S. F.
Carr, W. L.	Morrison, O. R.
Calvin, J. B.	Morris, D.
Clinton, T. M.	Osburn, S. H.
Childress, A. J.	Phillips, C. W.
Crow, E. F.	Penn, C. F.
Crow, A. R.	Ramsey, J. M.
Crow, J. R.	Sullivan, J.
Collins, A. B.	Scott, W.
Collins, W. M.	Simmons
Cunningham, S. S.	Strickland
Falwell, W. H.	Stone, J. T.
Ferguson, J.	Stone, J. F.
Griffin	Snodgrass, R. J.
Gaston, F. M.	Smith, J.
Gilley, B. W.	Turnbow, J.
Gary, W. H.	Truelock, E. M.
Griffin, A.	Weaver, F. L.

¹¹ Rusk County News (Henderson), March 26, 1902; Henderson
Daily News, March 26, 1942.

Herring, W. H.
Herrin, L.
Harper, J. J.
Henson, J. H.
Hampton, E.

Whitten, W. A.
Weaver, F. B.
Waldrop, J. C.
Walton, Oak

APPENDIX III

EXPLANATION OF MAP AREAS

Note: All of the map areas were in the municipality and/or county of Nacogdoches until the earliest date given below for each particular area. (1)

A in Rusk County	from	1/16/1843 (2)	to	date
B in Rusk County	from	1/16/1843 (2)	to	4/30/1874
in Gregg County	from	4/30/1874 (3)	to	date
C in municipality of San Augustine	from	3/ 6/1834 (4)	to	11/11/1835
in municipality and county of Shelby*	from	11/11/1835 (5)	to	12/14/1837
in Nacogdoches County	from	12/14/1837 (6)	to	1/16/1843
in Rusk County	from	1/16/1843 (2)	to	date
D in municipality of San Augustine	from	3/ 6/1834 (4)	to	11/11/1835
in municipality and county of Shelby*	from	11/11/1835 (5)	to	1/28/1839
in Harrison County	from	1/28/1839 (7)	to	12/31/1844
in Rusk County	from	12/31/1844 (8)	to	3/30/1846
in Panola County	from	3/30/1846 (9)	to	date

* Created as "Tenehaw" Nov. 11, 1835 (Gam. Laws, 1, 532); name changed to Shelby, Jan. 1, 1836 (Gam. Laws, I, 1025).

(1) It is assumed that the Municipality of Nacogdoches (See Eugene C. Barker, *Readings in Texas History*, p. 132) had jurisdiction over all the territory that was later constituted the Department of Nacogdoches (Gam. Laws, I, 281).

(2) Gam. Laws, II, 859.

(3) Gam. Laws, VIII, 181.

(4) Gam. Laws, I, 352.

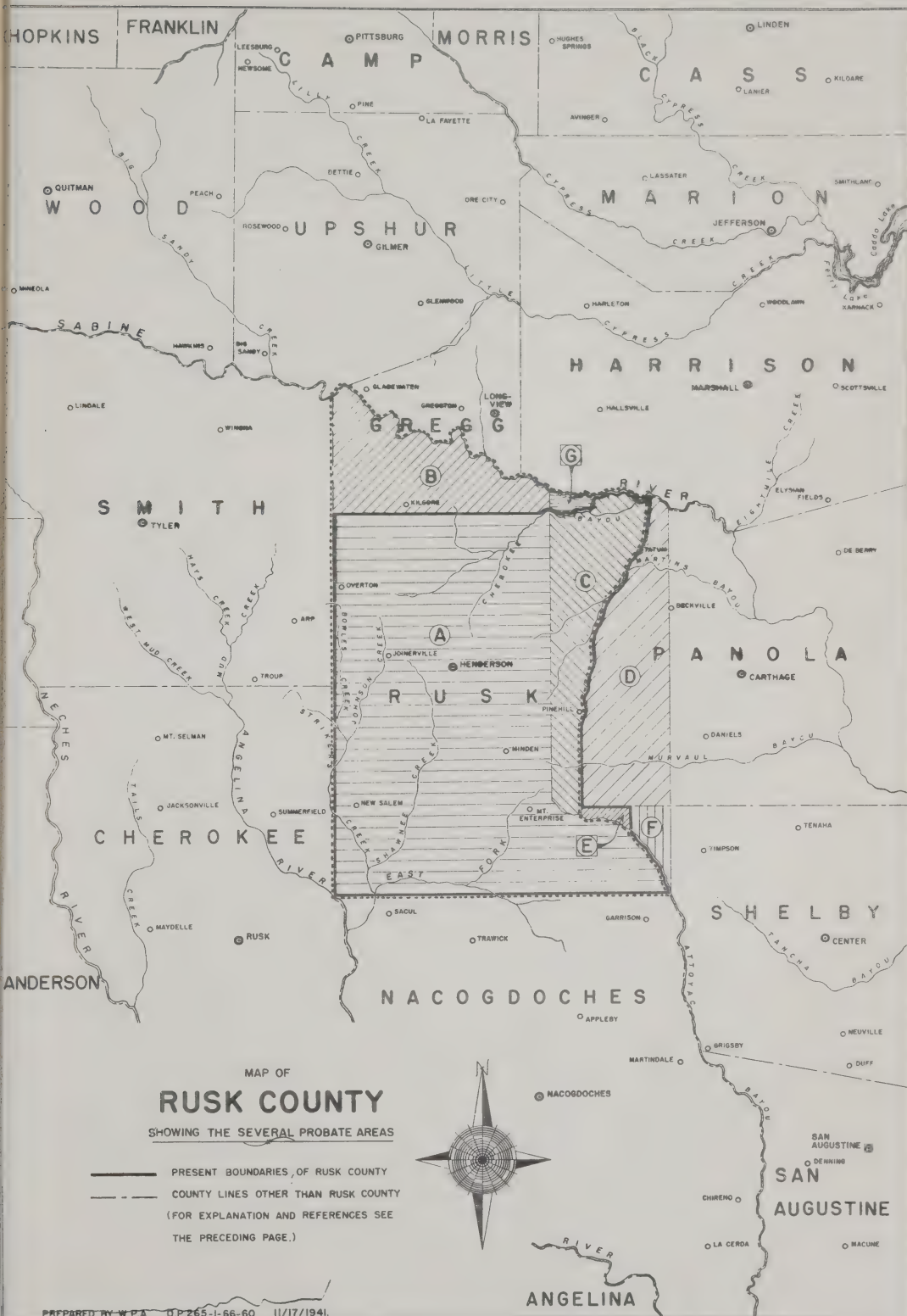
(5) The district of "Tenehaw" of the municipality of San Augustine was made a separate municipality in 1835, centering around the town of Nashville (present Center), but its boundaries were not defined (see Gam. Laws, I, 532). It is assumed that the municipality of Tenehaw, later renamed Shelby and as such became one of the original counties of the Republic of Texas, included all the northern part of San Augustine north of the northern line of the municipality of Sabine created in 1835 (see Gam. Laws, I, 993), and north of the San Augustine-Shelby line as defined in 1837 (see Gam. Laws, I, 1394).

(6) Gam. Laws, I, 1390.

(7) Gam. Laws, II, 159.

(8) Gam. Laws, II, 1054.

(9) Gam. Laws, II, 1337.



- E** in municipality of San Augustine from 3/ 6/1834 (4) to 11/11/1835
in municipality and county of Shelby* from 11/11/1835 (5) to 1/28/1839
in Harrison County from 1/28/1839 (7) to 1/30/1841
in Shelby County from 1/30/1841 (10) to 12/31/1844
in Rusk County from 12/31/1844 (8) to date
- F** in municipality of San Augustine from 3/ 6/1834 (4) to 11/11/1835
in municipality and county of Shelby* from 11/11/1835 (5) to 1/28/1839
in Harrison County from 1/28/1839 (7) to 1/30/1841
in Shelby County* from 1/30/1841 (10) to 12/31/1844
in Rusk County from 12/31/1844 (8) to 2/ 1/1845
in Shelby County from 2/ 1/1845 (11) to date
- G** in municipality of San Augustine from 3/ 6/1834 (4) to 11/11/1835
in municipality and county of Shelby* from 11/11/1835 (5) to 1/16/1843
in Rusk County from 1/16/1843 (2) to 4/30/1874
in Gregg County from 4/30/1874 (3) to date

The area within the dotted lines was created as a “judicial” county called Smith (not to be confused with the present Smith County, because no part of the territory is the same) on February 1, 1842 (Gam. Laws, II, 759), but was apparently never organized because acts attempting to create judicial counties were declared unconstitutional early in 1842 (*Stockton v. Montgomery* 1842), in Dallam’s **Texas Reports**, p. 473).

* Created as “Tenehaw” Nov. 11, 1835 (Gam. Laws, I, 532); name changed to Shelby, Jan. 1, 1836 (Gam. Laws I, 1025).

(2) Gam. Laws, II, 859.

(3) Gam. Laws, VIII, 181.

(4) Gam. Laws, I, 352.

(5) See footnote (5), p. iv.

(7) Gam. Laws, II, 159.

(8) Gam. Laws, II, 1054.

(10) Gam. Laws, II, 617, sec. 4.

(11) Gam. Laws, II, 1108.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

PRIMARY SOURCES

Interviews

John S. Crow to D. W., February 22, 1951.
Alf Harris to D. W., June 18, 1950.
Tom Jones to D. W., February 22, 1951.
Dr. Alex D. Krieger to D. W., July 7, 1950.

Letters

Mrs. Jimmie Harris to D. W., July 10, 1950.
Mrs. Jimmie Harris to D. W., October 10, 1950.
United States Weather Bureau, Dallas, Texas, to D. W., August 2, 1950.

Manuscripts, Maps, and Typescripts

Confederate Muster Rolls, Texas State Archives, Austin, Texas.
Eakens, Robert Henry Seale, The Development of Proration in the East Texas Oil Field, M. A. Thesis, University of Texas, Austin, Texas.
Julien S. Devereux Diary 1849-1851, M. S., Devereux Papers, in private collection of O. D. Weeks, Austin, Texas.
J. W. Devereux Diary for 1846, M. S., Devereux Papers, in private collection of O. D. Weeks, Austin, Texas.
Eighth United States Census (1860), Population Schedule (Microfilm), Archives Collection, University of Texas Library, Austin, Texas.
Election Returns, 1866-1870, M. S., Texas State Archives, Austin, Texas.
General Land Office Map of Rusk County, Texas, July, 1932. General Land Office, Austin, Texas.
Manuscripts in Rusk County files of Miss Myrtis Dean Watkins, Henderson, Texas.
Neal, Samuel Loyd, An Analysis of the Farm Test Unit Demonstration Program in Rusk County, Texas, M. A. Thesis, Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas, College Station, Texas.
Ninth United States Census (1870), Population Schedule (Microfilm), Archives Collection, University of Texas Library, Austin, Texas.
Probate Records, Vol. G, Rusk County, Texas, M. S., County Clerk's Office, Henderson, Texas.
Records of the Post Office Department, M. S., Records of Appointments of Postmasters, The National Archives, Washington, D. C.
Records 1844 Rusk County, M. S., County Clerk's Office, Henderson, Texas.
Robert Bruce Richardson Diary, M. S., in private possession of Miss Bess Richardson, Henderson, Texas.
Seventh United States Census (1850), Population Schedule (Microfilm), Archives Collection, University of Texas Library, Austin, Texas.
Translations of Mexican Land Grants, M. S., General Land Office, Austin, Texas.
Mrs. J. E. Watkins' scrapbooks on Rusk County, Henderson, Texas.

Magazine Articles

Benedict, H. Y., "George Pierce Garrison," Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XIV, Number 3, 1911.
"Black Gold' and Red Ink," Reader's Digest... Pleasantville, N. Y.

- (Reader's Digest Association), December, 1931.
 Carlton, Lena, "Historical Sketch of Henderson," undated clipping in Mrs. J. E. Watkins' scrapbooks on Rusk County.
 Crouch, Carrie J., "The Oil Fields of Texas," **National Republic**, Washington (American History and Public Affairs), Vol. XX, Number 10, March, 1933.
 Hawkins, Varney, "An Anglo-Saxon County," **Texas Monthly**. Fort Worth (Texas Monthly), Vol. II, Number 5, 1928.
 Morris, Mrs. Ned B., "Judge William Wright Morris: A Pioneer Homemaker," **Southwestern Historical Quarterly**. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. L, Number 3, 1947.
 New Orleans Medical and Surgical Journal. New Orleans (New Orleans Medical Society), Vol. XXII, July, September, 1894.
 Reagan, John H., "The Expulsion of the Cherokees from East Texas," **Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association**. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. I, Number 1, 1897.

Newspapers

- Daily Delta** (New Orleans), September 12, 1860.
Dallas Herald, September 9, 1865.
Dallas Morning News, November 7, 1890; July 16, 1912; September 14, 1930; October 4, 1930; October 6, 1930; March 29, 1931; June 14, 1931; August 18, 1931; August 30, 1936; September 3, 1940; December 1, 1940; March 29, 1947.
East Texas Times (Henderson), July 18, 1862.
Evening Picayune (New Orleans), August 20, 1860.
Flag of the Union (Henderson), February 2, 1854.
Galveston News, October 30, 1879.
Henderson Daily News, March 10, 1932; June 30, 1936; November 30, 1938; March 13, 1939; November 2, 1939; May 5, 1940; February 7, 1949; February 8, 1949.
Henderson Democrat, June 2, 1855; November 29, 1856.
Henderson Times, September 10, 1865; October 21, 1937; November 8, 1937; November 25, 1937; January 13, 1938; February 17, 1938; June 16, 1938; September 15, 1938; September 30, 1948; October 14, 1948; December 29, 1948; July 23, 1953.
Houston Chronicle, July 25, 1950.
Houston Post, July 25, 1950.
Jacksonville Progress, January 21, 1934.
Kaufman Herald, May 7, 1942.
Kilgore News Herald (20th Annual Oil Edition), September, 1950.
Matagorda Gazette, August 22, 1860.
Mount Enterprise Progress, April 27, 1936.
New Orleans Daily Picayune, August 6, 1894.
New York Times, August 23, 1932.
New York World, August 21, 1860.
Rusk County News (Henderson), November 1, 1888.
State Gazette (Austin), September 1, 1860; September 15, 1860.
Texas Statesman (Henderson), March 10, 1849.

Bulletins, Reports, and Yearbooks

- Burke's Texas Almanac and Immigrant's Hand Book for 1881**. Houston (J. Burke, Jr.), 1881.
 Carter, W. T., **The Soils of Texas**, Texas Agricultural Experiment Station Bulletin (College Station), No. 431, July, 1931.
 Henderson, Rusk County, Texas. Henderson (Henderson Chamber of Commerce), 1929.
 Johnson, Elmer H., **The Natural Regions of Texas**, University of Texas Bulletin (Austin), No. 3113, April 1, 1931.
 Krieger, Alex D., **Culture Complexes and Chronology in Northern Texas**, University of Texas Bulletin (Austin), No. 4640, October

- 22, 1946.
- Milner, R. T., *East Texas: Its Topography, Soils, Timber, Agricultural Products, People, Rainfall, Streams, Climate, Etc.*, Texas Department of Agriculture Bulletin (Austin), No. 38, 1914.
- Minor, H. E., and Marcus A. Hanna, "East Texas Oil Field," *Bulletin of the American Association of Petroleum Geologists*. Tulsa (American Association of Petroleum Geologists), Vol. XVII, Number 7, July, 1933.
- Reports of the Adjutant General of the State of Texas for the Fiscal Years Ending August 31, 1931, and August 31, 1932.** Austin (Knappe Printing Company), 1932.
- United States Department of the Interior, Bureau of Mines. *Statistical Appendix to Minerals Yearbook, 1932-1933*, inclusive, Washington (Government Printing Office), 1934.
- Texas New Yorker* (New York), November, 1877.

SECONDARY SOURCES

Books

- Bailey, Ernest Emory, *Texas Historical and Biographical Record*. Austin (Texas Historical and Biographical Record), 194(?).
- Barker, Eugene C., *The Life of Stephen F. Austin*. Nashville and Dallas (Cokesbury Press), 1926.
- Barron, S. B., *The Lone Star Defenders*. New York and Washington (The Neale Publishing Company), 1908.
- Biographical Directory of the American Congress 1774-1927*. Washington (Government Printing Office), 1928.
- Biographical Directory of the Texan Conventions and Congresses*. Austin (Book Exchange, Inc.), 1941.
- Biographical Encyclopedia of Texas*. New York (Southern Publishing Company), 1880.
- Biographical Souvenir of the State of Texas*. Chicago (F. A. Battey & Company), 1889.
- Braman, D. E. E., *Braman's Information About Texas*. Philadelphia (J. B. Lippincott & Company), 1857.
- Brown, John Henry, *Indian Wars and Pioneers of Texas*. Austin (L. E. Daniell), 189(?).
- Castaneda, Carlos E., *Our Catholic Heritage in Texas*. Austin (Von Boeckmann-Jones Company), 1936-1942.
- Cofer, David Brooks, *First Five Administrations of Texas A. and M. College, 1876-1890*. College Station (Association of Former Students of Texas A. and M. College), 1952.
- Crocket, G. L., *Two Centuries in East Texas*. Dallas (Southwest Press), 1932.
- Dallam, James Wilmer, *A Civil Digest of the Texas Reports*. Austin (Gammel Book Company), 1900.
- Daniell, L. E., *Personnel of the Texas State Government*. Austin (Press of the City Printing Company), 1887.
- Daniell, L. E., *Types of Successful Men of Texas*. Austin (E. von Boeckmann, Printer), 1890.
- Daniell, Ellis A., and Edwin H. Grobe, *New Encyclopedia of Texas*. Dallas (Texas Development Bureau), 19(?).
- DeRyee, Wm., and R. E. Moore, *The Texas Album of the Eighth Legislature, 1860*. Austin (Miner, Lambert & Perry), 1860.
- Dixon, Sam Houston, *Poets and Poetry of Texas*. Austin (S. H. Dixon & Company), 1885.
- Dixon, Sam Houston, and Louis Wiltz Kemp, *The Heroes of San Jacinto*. Houston (Anson Jones Press), 1932.
- Dumble, Edwin Theodore, *Second Annual Report of the Geological Survey of Texas, 1890*. Austin (State Printing Office), 1891.
- Ely, C. W., and A. E. Kocher, *Soil Survey of the Henderson Area, Texas*. Washington (Government Printing Office), 1907.

- Evans, Clement Anselm (ed.), *Confederate Military History*. Atlanta (Confederate Publishing Company), 1899.
- Farmer, Garland R., *Realm of Rusk County*. Henderson (Henderson Times), 1951.
- Fourteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1920. Washington (Government Printing Office), 1922.
- Fulmore, Z. T., *The History and Geography of Texas as Told in County Names*. Austin (The Steck Company), 1935.
- Gammel, H. P. N., *The Laws of Texas*. Austin (The Gammel Book Company), 1898.
- Giles, Bascom, *Abstract of All Original Texas Land Titles*. Austin (General Land Office), 1941.
- General and Special Laws of the State of Texas, Acts of the Forty-Second Legislature, First Called Session, 1931. Austin (n.p.) (n.d.).
- Green, Thomas J., *Journal of the Texian Expedition Against Mier*. New York (Harper & Brothers), 1845.
- Harter, Harry, *East Texas Oil Parade*. San Antonio (Naylor Company), 1934.
- Henderson, Texas, *City Directory, 1951-1952*. Corpus Christi (C. P. Page Directory Company), 1951.
- Indian Wars and Pioneers of Texas. Austin (L. E. Daniell Publisher) (n.d.).
- Johnson, Sid S., *Some Biographies of Old Settlers*. Tyler (S. S. Johnson), 1900.
- Johnson, Sid S., *Texans Who Wore the Gray*. Tyler (n.p.), 1907.
- Journal of the Confederate Congress of the Confederate States of America, 1861-1865*. Washington (Government Printing Office), 1904.
- Journal of the House of Representatives of the Regular Session of the Fifty-first Legislature of the State of Texas*. Austin (A. C. Baldwin & Sons), 1949.
- Johnson, Frank W. (E. C. Barker and E. W. Winkler (eds.)), *A History of Texas and Texans*. Chicago and New York (American Historical Society), 1914.
- Johnson, Robert Underwood and Clarence Clough Buel (eds.), *Battles and Leaders of the Civil War*. New York (The Century Company), 1888.
- Johnson, Rossiter (ed.), *Twentieth Century Biographical Dictionary of Notable Americans*. Boston (The Biographical Society), 1904.
- Kemp, L. W., *Signers of the Texas Declaration of Independence*. Houston (Anson Jones Press), 1944.
- Konwizer, Harry, *Texas Republic Postal Systems*. New York (H. L. Lindquist), 1933.
- Lathrop, Barnes F., *Migration Into East Texas 1835-1860*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), 1949.
- Legislative Manual for the State of Texas for 1879-1880*. Austin (E. W. Swindells), 1879.
- Loughery, E. H., *Personnel of the Texas State Government*. Austin (L. E. Daniell), 1885.
- Massengill, Fred I., *Texas Towns*. Terrell (n.p.) (1936).
- Members of the Legislature of the State of Texas*. Austin (n.p.), 1939.
- McDaniel, Ruel, *Some Ran Hot*. Dallas (Regional Press), 1939.
- Monuments Erected by the State of Texas to Commemorate the Centenary of Texas Independence*. Austin (The Steck Company), 1939.
- Paddock, B. B., *A Twentieth Century History and Biographical Record of North and West Texas*. Chicago and New York (Lewis Publishing Company), 1906.
- Phelan, Macum, *A History of Early Methodism in Texas*. Nashville (Cokesbury Press), 1924.

- Population of the United States in 1860.** Washington (Government Printing Office), 1864.
- Ramsdell, Charles William, **Reconstruction in Texas.** New York (Columbia University, Longmans, Green & Company), 1910.
- Rankin, Melinda, **Texas in 1850.** Boston (Damrell & Moore), 1850.
- Reed, S. G., **A History of the Texas Railroads.** Houston (St. Clair Publishing Company), 1946.
- Richardson, T. C. (Dabney White, ed.), **East Texas, Its History and Its Makers.** New York (Lewis Historical Publishing Company), 1940.
- Rister, Carl Coke, **Oil! Titan of the Southwest.** Norman (University of Oklahoma Press), 1949.
- Roach, Mrs. Hattie (Joplin), **A History of Cherokee County.** Dallas (Southwest Press), 1934.
- Rock, James L., and W. I. Smith, **Southern and Western Texas Guide for 1878.** St. Louis (A. H. Granger), 1878.
- Seventh Census of the United States, 1850.** Washington (Robert Armstrong, Public Printer), 1853.
- Spaight, A. W., **The Resources, Soil, and Climate of Texas.** Galveston (A. H. Belo & Company), 1882.
- Speer, William S., **Encyclopedia of the New West.** Marshall (United States Biographical Publishing Company), 1881.
- Statistics of the Population of the United States at the Tenth Census.** Washington (Government Printing Office), 1883.
- Texas Almanac (1857-1871).** Galveston (Richardson and Company), 1856-1871.
- Texas Almanac (1904-1949).** Dallas (A. H. Belo and Company), 1904-1949.
- Texas Newspapers, 1813-1939, A Union List of Newspaper Files Available in Offices of Publishers, Libraries, and a Number of Private Collections.** Houston (San Jacinto Museum of History Association), 1941.
- Texas State Gazeteer and Business Directory (1884-1885); (1896-1897).** St. Louis (R. L. Polk & Company), 1884-1896.
- Tharp, Benjamin Carroll, **The Vegetation of Texas.** Houston (Anson Jones Press for the Texas Academy of Science), 1939.
- Thrall, Homer S., **A Pictorial History of Texas.** St. Louis (N. D. Thompson Publishing Company), 1885.
- Thrall, Homer S., **History of Methodism in Texas.** Houston (E. H. Cushing), 1872.
- Thrall, Homer S., **Texas Hand-Book and Emigrants Guide for 1880.** St. Louis (N. D. Thompson and Company), 1880.
- Thirteenth Census of the United States Taken in the Year 1910.** Washington (Government Printing Office), 1913.
- Twelfth Census of the United States.** Washington (U. S. Census Office), 1902.
- War of the Rebellion.** Washington (Government Printing Office), 1891.
- Warner, C. A., **Texas Oil and Gas Since 1543.** Houston (Gulf Publishing Company), 1939.
- Watkins, Myrtis, and Pax Watkins, **In Old Rusk County: Being a Sketch of Some of the Early Houses and Pioneer Families.** Henderson (Multigraph), 1940.
- Webb, Walter Prescott, **The Great Plains.** Boston (Ginn and Company), 1931.
- Wharton, Clarence R., **Texas Under Many Flags.** Chicago and New York (American Historical Society, Inc.), 1930.
- Who's Who in America.** Chicago (A. N. Marquis Company), 1947.
- Wilbarger, J. W., **Indian Depredations in Texas.** Austin (Hutchings Printing House), 1889.
- Winfrey, Dorman H., **Texas Indian Papers, 1825-1843.** Austin (Texas State Library), 1959.

- Winkler, Ernest W., *Journal of the Secession Convention of Texas, 1861*. Austin (Austin Printing Company), 1912.
- Winkler, E. W. (comp.), *Secret Journals of the Senate of Republic of Texas*. Austin (Austin Printing Company), 1911.

Magazine Articles

- Broome, Mary Ann, "Captain Robert W. Smith," *Junior Historian*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. IX, Number 1, 1948.
- Blake, R. B., "Locations of the Early Spanish Missions and Presidio in Nacodogoches County," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XLI, Number 3, January, 1938.
- Bolton, Herbert E., "The Native Tribes About the East Texas Missions." *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*, Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XI, Number 4, April, 1908.
- Caplen, John A., "The Old G. H. & H. Railroad," *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*, Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XI, Number 1, 1907.
- Christian, A. K., "Mirabeau Buonaparte Lamar." *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XXIV, Number 1, 1920.
- Cole, Peggy, "New London School Explosion," *Junior Historian*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. VIII, Number 6, 1948.
- Connor, Seymour V., "The Evolution of County Government in the Republic of Texas," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*, Vol. LV, Number 2, 1951.
- Duran, Betty, "Pinehill," *Junior Historian*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. X, Number 4, 1950.
- Duran, Betty, "Richard Brown, Survivor of the Mier Expedition," *Junior Historian*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XI, Number 4, 1951.
- Gill, Julia, "Harmony Hill," *Junior Historian*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. II, Number 5, 1942.
- Gill, Marie, "History of Rusk County," *Junior Historian*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. VIII, Number 4, 1948.
- Howren, Alleine, "Causes and Origin of the Decree of April 6, 1830." *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XVI, Number 4, 1913.
- Humble Way. Houston (Humble Oil and Refining Company), Vol. VI, Number 2, 1950.
- Langston, Rosalind, "The Life of Colonel R. T. Milner," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XLV, Number 1, 1941.
- Phillips, Edward Hake, "The Texas Norther," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. LIX, Number 1, 1955.
- Sexton, F. B., "J. Pinckney Henderson," *Quarterly of the Texas State Historical Association*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. I, Number 3, 1898.
- Smith, Virginia, "Camden—Old Ghost Town on the Sabine," *Junior Historian*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. III, Number 6, 1943.
- Stewart, Charles, "The Killough Massacre," *Junior Historian*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XI, Number 1, 1950.
- White, Dabney, "Henderson Rich in Legends of Younger Days in Texas," *Frontier Times*. Bandera (J. Marvin Hunter), Vol. XIII, Number 1, 1935.
- White, William W., "The Texas Slave Insurrection of 1860," *Southwestern Historical Quarterly*. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. XLV, Number 1, 1941.

- Association), Vol. LII, Number 3, 1949.
- Winfrey, Dorman H., "Chief Bowles of the Texas Cherokees," **Chronicles of Oklahoma** (Oklahoma Historical Society), Vol. XXXII, Number 1, Spring, 1954.
- Winfrey, Dorman, "Dr. Albert Baldwin Miles," **New Orleans Medical and Surgical Journal**. New Orleans (New Orleans Medical Society), Vol. CIII, Number 9, 1951.
- Winfrey, Dorman, "General Webster Flanagan," **Junior Historian**. Austin (Texas State Historical Association), Vol. IV, Number 2, 1943.
- Woldert, Albert, "The Last of the Cherokees in Texas, and the Life and Death of Chief Bowles," **Chronicles of Oklahoma**. (Oklahoma Historical Society), Vol. I, Number 3, June, 1923.

INDEX

Please note: Names and localities in Appendix I and Appendix II have not been included in this index.

A

- Adams, J. W., 19
- Addison, W. F., 21
- Alexander, Isaac, 55; biography of, 117-118
- Alexander, Institute, 55, 117
- Alford, John R., biography of, 118
- Allen, ——— Dr., 28
- Allen, Elijah, 21
- Allison, William F., 17
- Alma, 30, 54, 83
- Anadarco, 30
- Angelina River, 3, 10, 12, 14, 60
- Armstrong, James R., 41
- Arnold, W. T., 93, 95
- Attoway, A. L., 54
- Attoyac Creek, 19
- Aynais, Indian Village, 7

B

- Bagley, Nathan, 52
- Baird, ———, 21
- Baird and Dooley, 21
- Barnett, S. Slade, biography of, 118
- Barton, James M., 43; biography of, 118
- Basinger, ———, 28
- Bateman, Ed W., 98
- Bean, Pedro Elias, 12
- Beckton, J. M., 73
- Bellview, 30, 43, 54, 83, 112
- Berry, Henry, 54
- Bethel, 105, 116
- Bewley, W. P., 31
- Big Mush, 8, 15
- Birdwell, Allen, 38
- Blackburn, William, 21
- Blossom Hill, 105
- Boggess, Milton M., 25, 43, 46; biography of, 119
- Booby, A. J., 70
- Bowden, Frank, 86; biography of, 119
- Bowles, Chief, 7, 14, 15
- Boynton, O. P., 89
- Brachfield, 5, 105, 116
- Bradford, Mrs. Daisy, 89, 90, 91, 92, 108
- Brewer, William, 17
- Bringhurst, William L., biography of, 120
- Brown, James N., 21, 73
- Brown, Richard, biography of, 121
- Brown, Robert Taylor, biography of, 121
- Brown, Taylor, 21, 38, 49
- Buford, Mrs. M. C., 73
- Bunker Hill, 30, 83
- Burks, Napoleon W., 31
- Burleson, Edward, 14
- Burnet, David G., 12, 14

C

- Cadena, Juana, B., 17
- Cadodachos Indians, 10
- Calahorra y Saenz, Joseph Francisco, 11
- Caledonia, 30, 54, 83, 105
- Calhoun, 30, 83
- Calloway, Willis, 33
- Cambridge, 30, 83
- Camden, 30, 32, 33, 75, 83, 106
- Camp, Thompson, 68
- Campbell, Dan, 65
- Carlisle, 97, 105
- Carlton, Lena; history by, 72-73
- Carlton, S. M., 72
- Caro, 76
- Caro Northern Railway Company, 76
- Carter, E. H., 67
- Casey, Martin, 87
- Castro, Francisco, 17
- Center, 83
- Centre, 30
- Chalk Hill, 105
- Chambers, Jesse H., 16
- Chancellor, James J., 54
- Chapman, 5, 105

Chapman, Henry, 13, 105; biography of, 122
 Chapman, John, 105
 Cherokee Bayou, 3, 33
 Cherokee Indians, 7, 13, 14, 15, 18
 Cherokee Indian Village, 108
 Chicken Feather, 84
 Christie, William, 46
 Church Hill, 83, 105
 Church Hill Male and Female Academy, 106
 Citizens National Bank, 93
 Clark, William, 16
 Compton, 106
 Concord, 84, 106, 116
 Cooper, Oscar Henry, 55, 68, 74; biography of, 122-123
 Corda, 14
 Cordova, Francisco, 17
 Cotton Plant, 30, 83
 Craig, 106
 Crim, J. W., 106
 Crim., Lou Della, 98
 Crims Chapel, 106
 Cross Roads, 106
 Crow, John S., 40, 42, 47, 50, 51
 Crow, W. J., 68
 Crow, W. M., 70
 Culberson, Charles A., 112
 Cumby, Mrs. —, 49
 Cumby, Robert H., 38, 43; biography of, 123
 Cyril, 108

D

Danville, 59
 Davenport Hotel, 40
 Davenport House, 71
 Davis, W., 70
 Davis, W. C., 74
 Deason, D. M., 71
 De Berry, A. W., 56
 Devereux, Julien Sidney, 24, 27, 28, 35; biography of, 123-124
 Dexereux, S. A., 38
 Dickinson, B. C., 7
 Dirgin, 106
 Dodson, J. M., 47
 Dodson, O. W., 75
 Dooley and Baird, 21
 Dupey, A. G., 21
 Durst, Joseph, 16

E

East Texas Beacon (newspaper), 75
 East Texas High School, 74
 East Texas Oil Field, 98-104
 East Texas Times (newspaper), 32, 43
 Eastern Texas Railroad, 35, 36
 Easton, 75, 106
 Ebenezer, 84
 Ector, Mathew Duncan, 30, 38; biography of, 124-125
 Edwards, Benjamin, 7
 Edwards, Hayden, 7, 13, 17
 Elliott, William, 11, 16, 105
 Elysian Fields, 84
 Endel, E., 66
 Endel, Baruch & Company, 66

F

Falcon, Josefa Perez, 16
 Field, Drury, 69
 Fields, Richard, 7
 First National Bank, 93, 94
 Flag of the Union (newspaper), 32
 Flanagan, 75, 107
 Flanagan, E. H., 38
 Flanagan, James Wainwright, biography of, 125
 Flanagan, James Winwright, 30, 32, 38, 39, 40, 52, 53, 66, 73; biography of, 126
 Flanagan, Webster, 38, 52, 53, 60, 63, 64, 74; biography of, 127-128
 Flores, Manuel, 14
 Forbes, John, 14
 Ford, John S., 43
 Forrest, Nathan Bedford, 110
 Foster, John, 33
 Fowler, Littleton, 31
 Fowler Institute, 31
 Fredonia, 30, 83
 Freedman's Bureau, 51

Gage, D., 21
 Gagne, Jean Baptiste, 16
 Galloway, A. P., 41
 Galveston, Houston and Henderson Railroad Company, 35, 36
 Garland, J. G., 38
 Garrison, Caleb Jackson, 43; biography of, 128
 Garrison, F. H., 71
 Garrison, George Pierce, biography of, 128-129
 Gathright, Thomas S., 74; biography of, 129
 Gibsontown, 18
 Glenfawn, 107, 116
 Gonzales, Maria Sinforosa, 16

G

Gonzales, Romano, 16
 Good Hope, 84
 Good Springs, 84, 107
 Gould L., 74
 Graham, A. B., 31
 Graham, Arch, 21
 Graham, John, 25
 Graham, Malcolm D., 31, 41, 42; biography of, 129-130
 Grand Bluff Road, 33
 Graveyard Spring, 5
 Griffin, John, 38
 Griffin, William, 45
 Grigsby, J. P., 21
 Grigsby, Solomon M., 21

Hall, C. F., 38
 Hamilton, Andrew; biography of, 130
 Hamilton, Andrew J., 50
 Hamilton, J. D., 43
 Hardeman's, P., 43
 Harmon, Nevil, 73
 Harmony Hill, 11, 30, 33, 50, 75, 83, 107, 108, 116
 Harris, Alf, 41
 Harris, Dick Randolph; biography of, 130-131
 Harris, E. W., 75
 Harris, Mrs. Jimmie, 91
 Harris, Wiley, 38
 Harter, Harry; article by, 95-97
 Hawkins, Varney; article by, 82-85
 Hays, Enoch, 33
 Head, Daniel, 71
 Heard, Ansel C., 24
 Helms, James H., 44
 Henderson, 5, 14, 18, 30, 54, 75, 78, 81, 82, 83, 84, 93, 94, 96, 103; burning of, 38-41; description of (1884), 75; historical sketch of, 72-73.
 Henderson College, 55, 74
 Henderson Daily News (newspaper), 131
 Henderson Democrat (newspaper), 32
 Henderson Female College, 30

H

Henderson Male and Female College, 55
 Henderson Masonic Female Institute, 49
 Henderson Summer Normal School, 72
 Henderson Times (newspaper), 46, 47, 49, 75
 Henderson, James Pinckney, 23, 72; biography of, 131-132
 Henderson and Burkeville Railroad, 35
 Henderson and Overton Railroad, 55, 56, 57, 58, 62, 65
 Henry, W. D., 21
 Henson, W. N., 22
 Herndon, Green, 40, 41
 Herndon, W. S., 52
 Herron, —, 49
 Hickey, Professor —, 74
 Hickory Grove, 84
 Hillin, Henderson, 34, 112
 Hollingsworth, Orlando Newton, 43; biography of, 132-133
 Houston, Sam, 14, 20, 31, 86
 Howze, Robert Lee, 112
 Howerton, —, 24, 28
 Hubbard College, 112
 Huejas, Ma Falcona, 16
 Hunter, John Dunn, 7
 Hutton, James, 21
 Hyde, S. Monroe, 21, 73

I

International and Great Northern Railroad, 55, 78, 82

Iron Mountain, 54
 Irwin, N. B., 21

Jackson, Thomas J., 17
 Johnson's Creek, 95
 Johnson, Benjamin, 54
 Johnson, Frank W., 25
 Johnston, Albert Sidney, 14
 Johnston, James W., 21
 Joiner, Columbus Marion (Dad),
 89, 90, 98, 108; biography of,
 133

Kangera, M., & Brother, 94
 Kangera, Rade, 91
 Kelly, Fannie, 54
 Kelly, W. C., 21, 41
 Kilgore, Constantine Buckley;

Lacy, —, 14, 15
 Laird, S. S., 108
 Laird, Hill, 108
 Lake Cherokee, 3, 6
 Landrum, Willis H., 14
 Lane, Robert L., 21, 73
 Laneville, 81, 108, 112, 116
 Langhorne, Corinne, 80
 Langston, A., 70
 Laster, E. H., 91
 Latham, James, 16
 Lawler, Isaac, 71
 Lawson, Frank, 108
 Lawsonville, 12, 108
 Lee, Isaac, 17

McClain, James, 17
 McClarty, John, 24
 McCune, James, 17
 McDonald, Thomas, 16

Magee, Richard, 24
 Mansfield, 45
 Mansola, Juan Bautista, 17
 March, S. W., 38, 54
 Mariotini, Mary A. O. 13, 17
 Marshall, W. K., 49
 Martin, Daniel, 11, 17
 Martinez, Jose Maria, 16
 May, George, 16
 Mayer, Abe, 67, 68
 Mayer, Lewis, 47
 Mayfield, Allison, 112
 Menchaca, Jose Nasario, 17

J

Joinerville, 96, 97, 108, 116
 Jones, James Henry, 43, 44, 46,
 69; biography of, 133-134
 Jones, John E., 68
 Jones, John W. 21
 Jones, Tom, 88 89
 Jowers, Dr. —, 14
 Just-Right Hotel, 96

K

 biography of, 134
 Kilgore, Lucy, 43
 Kilgore, 98
 Killough Family Massacre, 14
 Kuykendall, John, 33

L

Leverett, D. B., 109
 Leverett, J. D., 109
 Leverett, M. D., 43
 Leverett's Chapel, 109
 Lewis, Guy, 98
 Liberty, 109
 Liberty Hill, 33
 Lick-Skillet, 84
 Locust Grove, 63
 London, 50, 54, 83, 109
 Longview and Sabine Valley Rail-
 road, 75
 Lowry, Emmett, 27
 Lyles, B. B., 71
 Lynchburg, 24

Mc

McDonough, B. F., 32
 McDonough, J. S., 70
 McDonough's Hotel, 39
 McMurray, W. L., 47

M

Mexico, Henderson and Gulf Rail-
 road, 35
 Miles, Albert Baldwin; biography
 of, 135-136
 Miller, A. J. S., 21
 Miller, John C., 21, 73
 Miller, W. A., 18
 Millville, 30, 33, 54, 83, 89, 109-
 110, 116
 Millville Male and Female Acad-
 emy, 33
 Millville Oil Company, 89
 Milner, Tabitha, 57

Milner, Robert Teague, 3, 48, 55;
 biography of, 136-137
 Minden, 51, 75, 81, 110
 Missouri-Pacific Railroad, 112
 Miszner, J. C., 55, 120
 Moffett, John, 21
 Monroe, 110, 116
 Monte Verdi, 27, 28
 Morris, William Wright, 25, 31,
 65, 66; biography of, 137
 Moss, J. D., 65, 66
 Moss, William S., 54, 65, 66
 Mount Enterprise, 5, 12, 18, 30,
 33, 50, 54, 75, 76, 81, 83, 110,
 116
 Mount Enterprise Male and Fe-
 male Academy, 34
 Mount Enterprise Male and Fe-
 male College, 34, 110
 Mount Hope, 84
 Mouton, (Alfred), 46
 Murvall, 30, 83
 Murvall Creek, 105
 Muse, K. H., 21

N

Nacogdoches Indian Village, 7
 Neches, battle of, 14, 15, 18
 Neches River, 13
 New Danville, 30, 54, 83
 New Hope, 84
 New London, 97, 116
 New Salem, 30, 34, 43, 54, 83
 New Salem Academy, 34
 Nip 'n' Tuck, 84, 108
 Norfolk, 83
 Norvell, J. E., 70

O

Oak Flat, 84, 112, 116
 Oak Grove, 84
 Oak Hill, 112
 Obar, Thomas, 17
 Ochiltree, William Beck, 21, 23,
 30; biography of, 137-138
 Old Wire Road, 33
 Oliver, A. W., 69
 Overton, Frank, 112
 Overton, 55, 58, 75, 81, 82, 97,
 112, 114, 116
 Overton Branch Railroad Com-
 pany, 55

P

Parker, H. R. T., 70
 Parmer, Martin, 7
 Parsons, J. A. S., 21, 23, 73
 Parsons, J. H., 46, 53
 Pena, Marie Valverde, 17
 Perkins, H., 70
 Pilburn, John, 17
 Pigeon Hill, 83
 Pillsbury, Timothy, biography of,
 138
 Pinehill, 11, 30, 34, 54, 75, 79, 89,
 112, 116
 Pirtle, 83, 112
 Pistol Hill, 108
 Pleasant Grove, 84
 Pleasant Hill, 45
 Price, 116
 Price, J. M., 31
 Prior, Dr., 106
 Pru, Maria Josefa, 17
 Pruitt, John, 34, 38

R

Ragley, Frank, 79
 Ragley, W. C., 79
 "Ragley Road" Timpson and Hen-
 derson Railroad Company), 79
 Ramey, Sam, 57
 Ramon, Domingo (Jose Domin-
 go), 10
 Randolph Hotel, 94
 Ray, R. R., 23
 Reagan, John H., 14
 Reagan, William, 16
 Red River Campaign, 45
 Redwine H. D. E., 43; biogra-
 phy of, 138-139
 Redwine's Store, 39
 Reel, Daniel, 16
 Reel, Henry, 16
 Reeves, D. W., 21
 Reklaw, 114
 Richardson, Bess, 46
 Richardson, Robert Bruce, 46, 48,
 49

Richardson, T. C., 18
 Rio, Simon, 17
 Roberts, Oran M., 32, 42, 64
 Rock Hill Institute, 110
 Rocky Mount, 112
 Romero, Manuel Antonio, 17
 Ross, James A., 62
 Ross, L. B., 21
 Ross, William M., 21, 73

Roth, Jacob, 16
 Rountree, R., 73
 Rusk, Thomas Jefferson, 14, 20,
 72; biography of, 139-140
 Rusk County, 36; creation of, 19;
 naming of, 20
 Rusk County Academy, 30
 Rusk County Fair (1898), 76
 Rusk County News (newspaper),
 75

S

Sabine River, 3, 10, 11, 13, 14,
 19, 31, 32, 60, 106
 San Cosma, 30, 83
 Sand Hill, 30, 83
 Sand Springs, 7
 Santa Fe Railroad, 114
 Saunders, Watt L., 100
 Sexton City, 114
 ShakeRag, 84
 Shawnee Indians, 7, 13
 Shawnee Town, 7
 Shellville (Millville), 50
 Shiloh, 84, 114
 Shumate, C. C., 31
 Simpson, Dinsmore, 17
 Smithers, —, 39
 Smith, A. J., 70, 74
 Smith, J. P., 21
 Smith, James, 21, 22, 23, 24, 25,
 35, 72; biography of, 140-141
 Smith, Robert W., 13, 16, 21;
 biography of, 141-142
 Smith, Jesse, 30
 Smith, Joseph P., 21

Smith, Thos., 44
 Smyth, George W., 13
 Southern Beacon (newspaper), 32
 Spinks, J. D., 71
 Spivy, W. W., 70
 Star-Spangled Banner (news-
 paper), 31, 39
 Starr, James H., 23
 Starr, Parmelee, 23
 Stedman, William; biography of,
 141-142
 Steele's Grove, 54
 Sterling, Ross S., 98, 100
 Stewart, 114
 Still, J. N., 70
 Stockman, Henry, 12, 16
 Street, W. H., 38
 Strong, G., 70
 Stroud, Alfred D., 54
 Stroud, Mark, 50
 Sulphur Springs, 5, 84
 Swan, Leon, 39
 Swan, S. G., 39

T

Tally, P. H., 71
 Taovayas Indians, 11
 Tatum, Albert, 26, 27, 38, 114
 Tatum, 11, 26, 75, 81, 108, 114
 Tatum Home, 26, 27
 Taylor, Richard, 45
 Tehuacana Indians, 11
 Tejas Indians, 6, 10
 Teran de los Rios, Domingo, 10
 Texas New Era (newspaper), 39
 Texas Statesman (newspaper),
 31
 Thrall, Homer S., 5
 Throckmorton, James W., 50
 Timmons, Francis, 23, 73
 Timmons, T. G., 73
 Timmons, Thomas 21, 23

Timpson and Henderson Railroad
 Company, 79, 80
 Timpson and Northwestern Rail-
 road, 79
 Tipps, G. W. S., 21
 Tipps, J. S., 70
 Tipps, Jacob, 44
 Towiska Creek, 3
 Trammel, Francis, 54
 Trammel, Nicholas, 11
 Trammel's Trace, 11, 19, 26, 33
 Trammell, Mrs. —, 74
 Truitt, Mrs. J. P., 74
 Turner, J. H., 69
 Turnertown, 97, 116
 Tutt, Richard B., 25

Vannoy, Isaac, 73
Vansickle, H. C., 24
Vial, Pedro, 11

V

Vidales, Manuel, 17
Vina (de la) Juana Camunes, 17
Vinson, Charlie, 33, 110

W

Wallace, Harvey A., 43
Walling, Jesse, 13, 32, 33, 35, 106;
 biography of, 142
Walling's Ferry, 30, 32, 54, 83,
 106, 116
Walling, John, 17, 21
Watkins, Archibald H., 21, 46, 73;
 biography of, 142-143
Watkins, G. I., 110
Watkins, J. A., 45
Watkins, Jeremiah Edmund, 45,
 52; biography of, 143-144
Watkins, Myrtis, article by, 87-88
Watkins, Pax, article by, 87-88
Watson, H. W., 110
Watson, Willie, 38
Weaver, G. H., 67
Weaver, W. H., 67
Welch, Jas. H., 44
Welch's Springs, 5
Whatley, A. C., 38
Whatley, William, 45

White, Dabney, 18; mention of
 article by, 86
Whiteman, Dan, 73
Whiteside, J. A., 70
Whitman, D. T., 21
Whitmore, George W., 52
Wiggins, James Frederick, 43;
 biography of, 144-145
Wiggins, Hogg and Felton's Drug
 Store 38
Williams, Leonard, 12, 16
Williams, Thomas, 12, 16, 105
Williams, William, 12, 16
Williamson, Nelson, 21
Williamson, Russel, 17
Wilson, Oscar, 34
Wolters, Jacob, 98, 99
Wood, David, 21
Wood Glen, 83
Wyly, Alfred Henderson, 13
Wynn, Richard M., 54, 69; biog-
 raphy of, 145

X

Ximenes, Juan, 17

Y

Yates, —, 38
Yates, Mrs. —, 73
Yates, A. M., 49

Ybarbo, Jose Ygnacio, 12
Young, James; biography of, 145-
 146

Z

Zeve, A., 67
Zeve, L., 67

Zion Hill, 83

